

Click here to get the script

<http://matrixresurrected.com/>

MATRIX 4 – MATRIX RESURRECTED (WEBSITE COMMENTS from 2007-2012)

PREFACE TO COMMENTS: Between 2007 and 2012 my Matrix website received approximately 770,000 views and 800 thought-provoking comments. This was amazing and overwhelming in a positive way; thank you everyone for your tremendous response. Unfortunately in 2012 my site was inadvertently deleted by the hosting company and all data was lost. This was a major disappointment, and despite many attempts to recover it, I was only partially successful. The comments I was able to recover are available here. I hope you enjoy them.

PD Wood 2016

Matrix 4–Resurrected: A New Episode that Expands the Matrix Trilogy - by PD Wood©2007

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Paulski DATE: 8/29/2007 12:38:29 PM

I consider myself to be somewhat of an authority on "Matrix" updates, having read many attempts by others. I usually find all sorts of problems in plot, voice, even grammar, but I'll tip my hat to you. This is quality work, an engaging story, and wonderful character development. You give the story new life and intrigue. Glad to see that you did not get so focused on Neo but were able to expand the story and really give us something new and interesting. Good luck, this is the best I've read.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/30/2007 12:20:18 AM

Paulski,

It's encouraging to have the first comment be so positive. Thanks for reading, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jeff DATE: 8/31/2007 4:44:16 PM

I, too, consider myself a Matrix authority and I have to absolutely agree. I will give this an A+ on intrigue, redevelopment, and excitement. One criticism I must point out is the grammar of The Architect; you've softened the "big words" used. But still AWESOME and what a screen play. You should consider putting it out as a paperback (like all those star trek books). Thank you.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/3/2007 7:40:58 PM

Jeff,

Thanks for the nice comments.

And I agree, the Architect's words aren't quite as sophisticated in my story. I think part of that over-the-top word usage was specific to his persona as a sinister character in the Matrix Reloaded. In my story the change in his identity outside of the Matrix as a very different, more mellow character maybe allows for a change in his word choice? That's

how I came to it, anyway; I'm not sure whether it works as I intended. I was also worried that the choppy timeline and flashbacks might be confusing enough and I didn't want to add too much more that could create confusion; so I eschewed obfuscation by limiting sesquipedalian verbiage...if you know what I mean.

I appreciate the insight, though, and will consider moving a bit more in the "big words" direction if this thing ever comes to more than just a story on this website (i.e. a paperback). PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: JL Jenkins DATE: 10/10/2007 7:34:46 PM

I just finished reading, and I must say, it was a very good read. I suppose I got a bit confused at the ending. Does it completely end with the boy smiling into the camera? Can you explain to me what is the sinister part behind his smile and what it means?

I can honestly say, that was one of the better readings I've done in a while. While it wasn't as tight as the original Matrix screenplay (I read that thing like 4 times), it was extremely well developed and put forth many interesting ideas where the story could've, and probably should've gone in the sequels.

Is there going to be another part? 75 pages doesn't seem like enough and it seems like there's more to be said.

Please, finish it up.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/10/2007 9:53:31 PM

JL Jenkins,

I'm glad you liked it.

No, unfortunately, I don't have any plans for another part. I suppose some might be disappointed with my ending since it doesn't really climax the way most Hollywood action movies do. And it definitely leaves off with the potential for much more . But I guess that's my point, sort of; that the Matrix is a never ending cycle of infinite realities (which I try to convey in a few scenes). How do you really end a story like this and not contradict that underlying premise?

Instead, I suggest how the story will perpetuate itself without actually writing it all out. In the Matrix Smith returns and rebuilds. And the boy smiling at the end is Neo's son (who his old girlfriend, Rachael, never told him about). The young Neo, having inherited the same powers as his father, will eventually confront Smith and the machines and reestablish the balance. In the world outside the Super Matrix the humans, in control of all the worlds machines, battle the android 36s, who are trying to undermine that control and free all the machines (sort of the opposite of what's happening in the Matrix).

By the way, importing the Word file of my screenplay into Final Draft (a screenwriter's software) turned my 75 page document into a 125 page document. It turns out that

that's over the limit for most screenplays so I'm whittling away at it to bring it to an acceptable length. Soon, I'll post it as a properly formatted screenplay on my site in addition to the version that's already up there.

I love the feedback. Any other comments would be greatly appreciated.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Stephan DATE: 10/14/2007 5:21:32 AM

OK first off i must say that you're work follows no timelines, has horrible relations with the movies, i couldn't believe more than half of the things you stated in the first 3 paragraphs, and it would be a horrible depiction of anything that could happen in any movie, i know it seems like I'm hating a lot, but the truth hurts

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/14/2007 2:02:25 PM
Stephan,

I'm sorry you found it so lacking.

If you could be more specific about your comments, it would be more constructive for me.

(1) I agree the timelines are difficult to follow; that's hard to avoid with all the flashbacks, but, you're right, I could work on that.

(2) In what ways do you think it has horrible relations with the movies?

(3) What things in the first three paragraphs seemed so unbelievable?

(4) And I guess "horrible depiction of anything that could happen in any movie" doesn't require much more elaboration, so I'll just leave that one alone.

I'm committed to making the story better and would definitely respond to any ideas you have.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Brandon DATE: 10/23/2007 12:01:54 AM

I must say, bravo!

I read through about a third, then skimmed the rest, but from what I've seen this is the best Matrix 4 story I have seen in a long time, and I was part of several Matrix fanfic sites for a few months so I've seen 'em all, including a few unsuccessful attempts of my own. You take the story in a very interesting direction and do a lot with the base material for the matrix.

My advice would actually be to turn this into a new trilogy. This matrix is far too different from the film versions we've seen. The scene where Smith's head explodes into some kind of dragon snake really creeped me out and seemed way out of place for the world of Matrix that had been so firmly established in the previous films. If you made three films, or perhaps better built up the weirdness instead of handing it all to us at once like that, I feel like viewers, and maybe even the Wachowskis, would be more willing to go along with you on that.

I also question, a little bit, your decision to have the whole "super matrix" thing. When I read that everything (Zion, the Matrix) was all fake, I'll admit, my heart jolted briefly, because I don't want to believe everything I've seen before is false, and I really really really didn't buy that Trinity had been lying to Neo all these years. You change everything about the world in a few dozen pages, you revamp it completely. I don't think anybody is going to want to go along with that realistically. Maybe you could compromise, and keep a bit more of the reality of the Matrix we know alive and well.

Don't be stagnant, re-hashing the same story over and over again, which is what I've often seen happen with Matrix 4 stories, but instead metamorphosize your ideas and incorporate them into the Wachowski's world more. Also, sometimes it borders on way too cheesy, and your dialogue needs tightening up because there were a lot of lines that I wouldn't ever buy a character speaking. And your action needs to be better incorporated into the story. With Matrix 1 and 2, less so with 3, the action was a seamless part of the whole, whereas in this story it usually seems as if you're adding it as an afterthought. What made the original Matrices so great was that they were a perfection fusion of anime, comic books, wire-fu, and fan psycho babble that transformed into a beautiful and captivating whole.

Here you need to clean up the edges a little bit, concentrate more on fusing rather than just putting them together like puzzle pieces.

Good luck! I look forward to hopefully reading any revisions you come up with!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/23/2007 3:26:21 AM
Brandon,

"Bravo" and "best Matrix 4 story" are nice to hear; and I think your criticisms are pretty accurate overall. I do feel, though, that by skimming the last two thirds of the story, you may have misinterpreted some parts.

My screenplay definitely steps out of the world of Zion, which most Matrix fans identified with very strongly. I can see how that might be unsettling. The unveiling of a whole other reality may seem like I'm trivializing the worlds of Zion and the Matrix. But if you read carefully, you'll see that one of the major points of my story is that, no matter how many realities (or illusions) there are, they're all real in terms of our experience of them. The Matrix, Zion, the Super Matrix, the world of the Cortex and the Source, and even any worlds beyond that all are real because of the power they have to shape who we are. They become our experiences, real or imagined, and that's all we are really - our experiences. I felt like I focused enough on what was happening in Zion and

the Matrix so as not to marginalize them. I definitely wanted to show that those worlds still exist and are as important as any other.

If you reread the part about Trinity's relationship with Neo, you'll see that she doesn't lie to him. She enters into the Super Matrix (i.e. the world of Zion and the Matrix) with absolutely no knowledge of the world she initially came from. It's not until she's extracted from the Super Matrix that she regains her knowledge of the real world. That's a very important distinction.

I do change things about these worlds pretty quickly and with a jolt. I was hoping that would give it great drama and impact; your comments suggest that it's too much, too quickly. I can definitely see your point. Hopefully, it doesn't hit everyone that way.

There are definitely some cheesy parts (which one's are you referring to)? It doesn't seem totally out of keeping with the Matrix Trilogy to me, though; there were some cheesy parts there, too. And, yes, the dialogue needs some real work, tightening up, etc. I've been working hard on a version that's properly formatted as a real screenplay. It does a lot of dialogue editing and tightening of action. Hopefully, this helps a bit.

Trying to do a prequel/sequel had many challenges. One of them was incorporating the story and the action seamlessly. I admit that that needs work. As you say, it doesn't flow as well as the Wachowski brother's movies. I'm not sure I could ever pull that off.

I do appreciate the time it took you to give these in depth comments. They're very helpful. I'll probably make some minor revisions to the story and tweak it here and there occasionally. But I think it's time I move on to a screenplay wholly of my own creation. This Matrix project was great fun and very exciting, but I really do need to bring my own story to light.

Again, thanks for the banter. Any other suggestions and comments would still be enthusiastically received.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Sunny DATE: 10/27/2007 7:10:58 PM

Just read your screenplay, must say it is really good. I like the premise of a super matrix!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Eric DATE: 10/28/2007 2:16:39 AM

Hey PD,

I am glad you wrote this continuation of Matrix. You helped heal some of the gaping holes and wonderings I had after watching the trilogy over and over. I know it is good money making practice to leave the audience wanting more. I am however an over thinker. So, I thought the matrix series was just plain cruel. You helped give credence to at least one side of the ongoing argument in my own head. By reading your story I found a peace I have not felt since seeing these movies. I really enjoy the characters and the thought behind all this. Your version makes sense and seamlessly progresses the story

from the point at which it left off. Thank you so much. I for one would gladly buy any book you put out in the future to continue this line of thinking you so eloquently have brought forth. At peace..

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/28/2007 3:31:16 AM
Thanks Sunny,

The notion of even another layer of reality (i.e. the Super Matrix) in the Matrix story puts some people off. But...could be the same in our world and we just don't know it yet. That'd put people off just as much, I guess. Anything is possible.

Pd Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/28/2007 3:37:39 AM
Eric,

I kind of felt the same way...that there was more to the story. It could really have gone in many directions; I'm glad you found mine a satisfying one.

But even mine is still very open-ended. It's hard to find an ending to a story that is really talking about nuance, layers, realities; they are kind of limitless.

Anyway, thanks for the feedback.

PD wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Wildcat DATE: 11/3/2007 7:19:43 PM
I think it is written very well. The only problem I would have enjoying the movie is if the original characters we not cast in this movie. What are ways I could help get this movie in the works. Manpower or word of mouth? I would definitely be up to help as an avid fan.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/4/2007 6:19:45 PM
Wildcat,

I'm glad you liked it. And I agree, it would only be enjoyable if the original actors were in the movie.

The roadblocks seem to be:

- 1) I doubt the Wachowski brother's want to continue the story. If they did, they probably would have by now.
- 2) If they did continue it, they would (probably) want their own original story, not mine.
- 3) I think the original actors have voiced their desire not to do another Matrix movie.

Those are the most obvious ones to me. I'm sure there are others.

I wrote this new story, but basically all I can do with it is show it around. It has no money making potential for me personally because I don't own the copyright to the characters or the underlying story line. That's another hurdle to moving this story any further along.

Word of mouth, popular interest, and the right people seeing it might break down some of those roadblocks, but I don't know if that would be enough.

If you have ideas, let me know. I'm all ears.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Orlando DATE: 11/9/2007 4:11:01 AM

Wow, just started and I'm hooked! Too bad it's too late in the night to finish it.

Morpheus doesn't seem as bold and the Architect isn't as cold-heartedly indifferent, but I love where the story is heading!! Good job on the visuals!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/9/2007 1:12:30 PM

Cool. Let me know what you think of the ending.

Yes, the characters are different, but I think that's what gives this story it's own space. Some will like it; some won't.

I show Morpheus having lost a lot of his steam because the prophecy has been fulfilled. That was his driving force in the Trilogy. Also, his two good friends Trinity and Neo are dead (to him). In combination that's enough to knock the wind out of most people's sails.

The Architect has a whole other angle to him which you'll discover as you read on. I think it's darn chewy, yes I do.

And, yeah, the visuals were great fun to create.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: DATE: 11/11/2007 5:31:26 PM

Hear is a real question and I'd like an answer: Why the hell would you call it the 'Super Matrix'! that is NOT marketable. When it comes to 2nd Matrix Ideas, I would be your competition and to start, I have 4 better names than that. If you want to get your play through, you best send me an email Bro. By the way, how old are you? tell me your not 45 or something.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/12/2007 4:09:20 AM Hi Nyx,

Maybe you could help me out a bit more with your comments.

"Hear is a real question and I'd like an answer: Why the hell would you call it the 'Super Matrix'! that is NOT marketable."

Why don't you think it's marketable as the Super Matrix?

"When it comes to 2nd Matrix Ideas, I would be your competition and to start, I have 4 better names than that."

What better names do you have in mind? What are your 2nd Matrix ideas? And how are you my competition?

"By the way, how old are you? tell me your not 45 or something."

Not sure why my age matters. Why does it?

Nyx, I'm open to any ideas you have. Did you read my screenplay?

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR:Larry DATE: 11/16/2007 3:07:24 PM

I like the story, but I have to be honest. It is not complete. The concept you have is very good. However, it doesn't read like a movie. It reads like the first hour of a movie. The second hour is missing. I understand that you are trying to get this accepted for the big screen but...it is incomplete in this form. All the characters just talk...and explain the new scenario. And then the movie ends.

There is no antagonist/protagonist relationship to drive this as a movie or even as a book.

It is very good as a concept...but it needs to be developed into an actual plotline for a movie. People are not going to want to watch this movie as it becomes 'The Matrix' all over again...and then stop it in the middle.

I'm sorry but I have to say...go back to the drawing board and re-do it. Most movie scripts are 300pgs +.....this is 106.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/16/2007 9:37:20 PM

Larry,

I see your point and I tend to agree to some extent. There is a lot of talking and that does slow the pacing down more than I would like (or than most people probably would want for a Matrix movie). That was the biggest challenge. I tried to break up the talking scenes with enough action scenes and suspense to make those talking parts acceptable. And I felt like most of the talking parts had enough surprise or tension in them to make them edgy and engaging. It seems for you that it wasn't enough.

And, yes, the story ends a bit abruptly. I kind of felt the same way...that there should be more to the story. But it's hard to find an ending to a story that is really talking about nuance, layers, realities; they are kind of limitless. Instead of bringing it to a finite conclusion, I decided to leave it open-ended with just enough information to suggest where it might go and leave the rest up to people's imagination. I know that's not the

best way to end a movie and it can leave a bad taste in a lot of people's mouths, but a fourth movie seems to be stretching it as it is; a fifth one...phew... that could get tiresome in my opinion and start to feel almost like a TV series was brewing.

The antagonist/protagonist relationship is lacking to some extent. But this isn't a self-contained movie, which, I agree, would require that relationship; instead it's really the last part of one long movie in four parts. It's the revelatory conclusion. To me, the antagonist/protagonist relationship exists here in the same person, Neo. He struggles with himself to find acceptance and meaning; and in the end he triumphs. Not quite the clear Smith v.s. Neo antagonist/protagonist relationship but still I think one exists.

Anyway, I could go on defending my position, but your point that the screenplay lacks a feeling of totality and ending is not without merit. That said, I still will probably leave the story as it is (barring minor tweaks) and move on to one that's completely my own. I'm a bit burnt out on the Matrix as you might imagine.

Your comments are appreciated and as I write my next screenplay, I will take your advice to heart. The antagonist/protagonist relationship is key and an ending that doesn't dangle will leave the audience more satisfied.

Thanks, PD Wood

By the way my understanding is that feature-length screenplays for movies should rarely be under 90 or over 120 pages. I've never heard of 300+ pages for a single 1 1/2 to 3 hour movie. Am I mistaken?

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/17/2007 1:53:54 AM
Hi Nyx,

"If you want to get your play through, you best contact me Bro."
Well, here I am.

"Hear is a real question and I'd like an answer: Why the hell would you call it the 'Super Matrix'! that is NOT marketable."
Why don't you think it's marketable as the Super Matrix?

"When it comes to 2nd Matrix Ideas, I would be your competition and to start, I have 4 better names than that."
What better names do you have in mind? What are your 2nd Matrix ideas? And how are you my competition?

"By the way, how old are you? tell me your not 45 or something."
Not sure why my age matters. Why does it?

Nyx, I'm open to any ideas you have. Did you read my screenplay?
PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Larry DATE: 11/19/2007 10:09:33 PM

Also, I remembered a movie from more than a few years ago called the 'The Thirteenth Floor.' Dennis Haysbert 'Major League's Pedro Cerrano' is in it. This movie is almost exactly the same storyline as you propose in the Matrix 4. They are virtual people who create a virtual world of their own....and eventually the hero makes it out to the 'real world'. His story is almost like Neo's.

Here is the info from IMBD

[http:// www.imdb.com/title/tt0139809/](http://www.imdb.com/title/tt0139809/)

Computer scientist Hannon Fuller has discovered something extremely important. He's about to tell the discovery to his colleague, Douglas Hall, but knowing someone is after him, the old man leaves a letter in his computer generated parallel world that's just like the 30's with seemingly real people with real emotions. Fuller is murdered in our real world the same night, and his colleague is suspected. Douglas discovers a bloody shirt in his bathroom and he cannot recall what he was doing the night Fuller was murdered. He logs into the system in order to find the letter, but has to confront the unexpected. The truth is harsher than he could ever imagine...

Sorry to burst your bubble man.

-Larry

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Larry DATE: 11/19/2007 10:22:24 PM

I like the fact that you made the source organic..a person. The 4th movie should explore that more.

Actually, I have an idea....instead of taking the Matrix back a level into the REAL WORLD....what we made it so that the people who 'think' they are 'free' and in ZION...are actually STILL IN the Matrix. And that the Matrix and the ability to move in and out of it are all just a computer generated way to keep ALL of the people under control.....this way the 'problem poeple' would think they are free and in REALITY....but still in the REAL matrix..only without knowing it. The machines would still have complete control.

Then that would explain how Neo could control the machines in the so-called 'REAL' world. And that would also give us a way to bring Neo back. Since he was actually not damaged in real life.

And then armed with this knowledge he could find a way to REALLY set everyone free.

Being that the source is organic now...we can assume that these machines are somehow bio-mechanical in the REAL WORLD. Changes things up a bit. Maybe NEO can get to the source and speak to its HUMAN HALF.

Something to think about and expand on...

Let me know what you think

-Larry

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/20/2007 1:17:33 AM

Larry,

Yes. I was informed of that movie while writing my own. When I saw it, it did kind of burst my bubble initially. But after I got over the initial disappointment (of the general theme being similar), I jumped right back in because I knew the differences were dramatic enough to continue. Besides, isn't the basic story of the original Matrix already very similar to the story line of the Thirteenth Floor? Main character begins to question his reality only to discover he's living in a virtual world? Hooks up with babe outside of virtual world? I think the main thing that makes the Matrix Trilogy and my Matrix 4 stand out (from the Thirteenth Floor) are the uniqueness of the characters and how they develop over time. The similarities are there but the differences are, too, I think. Don't you?

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/20/2007 1:51:36 AM

Larry,

I like it. Dense and intense.

It's a whole other story, though. Sounds like something you should write, if you're into it.

At this point I'm into minor tweaks only. Gotta move on to the next project.

But, really, you should give it a try. It's quite a challenge.

Thanks for the suggestion. PD Wood

COMMENT: DATE: 11/20/2007 2:28:16 AM

me write it? ahaha

i cant even make a posting without typos...LOLOL

COMMENT: AUTHOR: DATE: 11/20/2007 2:35:01 AM

instead of the 'Super Matrix' maybe you could call it the 'Origin' or the 'Quantamatrix' or 'Matrix Prime' or 'Prime' or 'Matrices Prime'

COMMENT: AUTHOR:Chris DATE: 11/22/2007 12:44:49 AM

First... the bad stuff..

I agree that I dont see the characters saying the first few paragraphs. With the bitterness between them to just vanish and now eveyone wants to be buddies is unbelievable.

As someone else poitned out.. very similar to the 13th floor.

The machines morphing themselves into other people is similar to Terminator II (the T-1000 could do the same thing).

Now the good stuff...

You merged the old matrix movies well with this one. It does explain some interesting questions that were left. For instance, how could Neo stop the machines at the end of Reloaded. Just how did he and the matrix become one? Well, your screenplay basically tells us that there is the glitch between the Matrix and the SuperMatrix (SM).

I like the fact that you also changed the code, to a differnt color for the SM. I can almost picture it.. having it run in from both sides instead of just from the top down.

I also like how you leave it open for another movie. Using NEO's son to carry onthe fight. Interesting concept. Unfortunately, Smith will need to be taken care of long before NEO Jr is old enough.

Questions...

With smith slicing the air and gettng the silver ooze... Is he "cutting" into the supermatrix?

Have you sent the idea/screenplay in to the W. Brothers to see if they would even entertain the idea?

Good luck.. Maybe your "Matrix" will become a reality some day (no pun intended)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/22/2007 1:48:23 AM

Chris,

Thanks for the commentary.

I thought the opening scene worked pretty well. Here's my take on it. Lock's hard-nosed attitude towards Morpheus was primarily due to Lock's inability to accept the prophecy. In contrast Morpheus' total belief in the prophecy clashed hard with Lock's disbelief. In this opening scene Lock seems now to almost believe. He can now understand and accept. And the split between Niobe and Lock seemed to come from Lock's inability to change. Again, in this opening scene Lock suddenly begins to show his willingness to

change and accept. And, of course, the sentinels are leaving and it seems that the war is over. Just another reason to let the good times roll and be thankful and forgiving, no?

Yep, Terminator II, the Thirteenth Floor, there are definitely similarities.

I'm glad you think this merges well with the Trilogy. Connecting all the pieces was damned hard (but fun!).

The appearance of the code changes because, as opposed to Matrix code which is computer/machine-based, the Super Matrix code (in the Cortex) is organic/neuronbased. The Super Matrix code is supposed to appear like brain synapses firing or something like that.

I didn't really leave it open-ended so another movie would be made. I think four is enough. I just like the idea that the story can continue in many possible directions. A decisive ending is good marketing, but I often find them to be a little too clean. I like to leave a little room for imagination and suspense.

In my story even though Smith has supposedly gained the same powers as Neo, I imply that Smith will never tap into those powers and discover the Super Matrix the way Neo did because Smith's anger and single-mindedness blind him to the existence of something beyond the world of Zion and the Matrix. So, no, Smith slicing the air is not him cutting into the Super Matrix; it's him tapping directly into the code of the Matrix, a direct line that bypasses the machines and allows him to manipulate code or enter the mainframe at will. He first used it only to clone others to his likeness; and in my story by accident he taps into and sees that it has much more potential. Thus, his invasion of the machine mainframe near the end.

No, I haven't tried to send it to Warner Brothers. Perhaps I should. What have I got to lose?

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Aaron DATE: 11/25/2007 3:51:03 PM
You are the best. Make a Matrix 4, plz!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/25/2007 9:08:02 PM
aaron,

If the opportunity arises, I'd be more than willing.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Brandon DATE: 11/27/2007 12:49:49 AM
This script is amazing! I downloaded it and I am reading it right now. I always thought from the ending of three they should at least make another Matrix. And it seems that you have done that. Thanks so much for taking the time to write such a perfect script;

you really have done a good thing for the Matrix series. I hope that this script will be read by Warner Bros. and that perhaps they will make a fourth matrix movie. I encourage you to keep going in your mission to make a fourth movie. Again it is a great script and if it is made into a movie, it will be the best matrix movie since the first!

Kudos to you my friend,

Sincerely, Brandon

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/27/2007 1:36:30 AM
Brandon,

That's some tall optimism. Thanks.

It's been a long time since the third one came out; perhaps too long for a fourth to be feasible. But you never know, I suppose. I'm going to send it off to Warner Brothers and see if it generates any interest. Can't hurt to try. Cross your fingers.

Let me know what you think of the ending of the screenplay. By the way are you a screenwriter?

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Brandon DATE: 11/27/2007 2:10:26 AM
Yeah it has been a long time, I just hope that a fourth movie might spark some interest in Warner Brothers and the Wachowski Brothers. But I am happy that you are going to send it off. I will cross my fingers and hope that something might happen. It's such a good script that I don't know why it wouldn't at least make Warner Brothers think of the possibility. And, yes, I will definitely let you know about the ending. Right now I am on page 65 so I will probably get back to you maybe tonight or if not tomorrow.

Well man thanks for the response, and
hope to talk to you later.

Brandon Beal

COMMENT: AUTHOR: DATE: 12/2/2007 4:51:36 AM
I downloaded and read the entire manuscript in just over an hour. I found the story to be very interesting and even compelling. It was hard to watch the trilogy come to an end. Thanks to you, there is new life and hope the story will go on. Way to go!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/2/2007 2:02:27 PM
Dan,

That's a fast read. Probably the best way to do it. The story really jolts best in one sitting. Glad you liked it.

I may finally have a solid lead on someone at Warner Brothers to send the manuscript to. Cross your fingers.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Rockett DATE: 12/3/2007 10:51:38 PM

Firstly i must say, good job on writing something as complex and mind bending as the matrix can be. I read your super matrix last night in one go, couldnt put it down, (likewise the night before last when i read your Rememory screenplay in one go). I was thoroughly enjoying myself, it was great, a good continuation of the story which so many of us want.

BUT all of the sudden, it finished. Nothing more about Smith manipulating the matrix source code once he and his clones entered the source and how this effects the matrix and the people in it and how to stop it, nothing more about the 36's and their fight against the humans and how they stole that stuff from the military compund and what they plan to do with it, or if they gain access to the Cortex, no more about Neo and his character development and possibility of jacking back in to save the Super Matrix, Zion, or the Cortex, no more about Morpheus finding more Smiths in Zion, no more about Neo waking up in a coffin in Zion, no more about the Merovingian, no more about anything, i was left hanging when i so desperately wanted more.

Despite it being a good read, i was so shattered that i was compelled to come here and let you know how annoyed i was. I can understand that its hard work and your prob fed up with it, i would be too, but you just pulled a "Wachowski". Leaving the expectant crowd begging for more. Obviously thats a good thing in a way cos you know its good if they want more....but seriously, this needs to be expanded to 300 pages MINIMUM, i dont really care its a screenplay or anything, but we all just need a story continuation.

Great job with what you have done already though, i tip my hat to you. But there is soooooo much more that can be done with this...Please....GIVE US MORE, MORE, MORE!!!

Take it easy man.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/4/2007 1:58:59 AM
Rockett,

Thanks for the kind words on the overall story. Sorry the ending is a bugger for you.

I understand your frustration. I can see the continuation, too. And I'm sure it could go on almost indefinitely. But that, to me, is the problem. For how long should it go...and where? That's why I decided to put storylines in motion and leave the rest up to people's imagination.

What I did feel I accomplished was bringing the characters of the Merovingian, Persephone, the Architect, Trinity and Neo full circle. To me they all have more

substance and definition. The familial connection between the Merovingian, Persephone, the Architect, and Trinity adds a real twist to the whole story. The Architect is more multi dimensional because he now becomes the savior of Neo and mankind. Trinity is fleshed out as the one who goes in and balances out the Super Matrix while also bringing Neo to the real world. She is not just the lover of Neo anymore. Smith regains his foothold in the Matrix, and may soon dominate, but will eventually be balanced out by the young Neo (as he grows older). And, finally, Neo comes to terms with his own place in reality, no longer being filled with angst. He finds a home.

I never really intended to bring the story to a hard conclusion; I mostly wanted certain characters that were introduced in The Matrix Reloaded to have more development in the overall story. I think I accomplished that.

If my screenplay were ever turned into a movie, I'd be inclined to add more to the story; but as it stands now, I probably will leave it as it is. I apologize for making an ending that leaves people annoyed. Hopefully, lady luck will shine and there will be more to come.

Thanks for the feedback.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: kid k DATE: 12/4/2007 10:29:50 PM

I just finished reading it yesterday and i must say i really enjoyed it i found it very exciting and compelling from begining to end it almost felt like i was watching the movie! good job mr woods, well done!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/4/2007 11:14:11 PM

kid k

makes my day to hear your enthusiasm thank you thank you
pdwood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Zishan DATE: 12/13/2007 6:51:04 AM

The story makes a mockery I would say of the original Matrix. The Christianity part of the whole story is gone, as in Reloaded and Revolution. The Matrix is a trilogy and trilogies never have another movie sorry to disappoint you. The story was good initially but the ending truly was ... really..bluntly... it was horrible. The beginning was good but when you add a lot of stuff that you don't need your story dies... But thats just my opinion.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Gareth DATE: 12/13/2007 12:11:11 PM

I am by no means an expert on script writing or a movie critic but I loved it! It filled in a lot of gaps i still had after watching the trilogy several times, and it was very interesting to see how another person interpreted the trilogy. I think if you aren't already in the script writing business, you should be. I don't know if you intend on writing a 5th episode but I would be very interested to read it. Well done!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/13/2007 10:42:04 PM
Zishan Budhwani,

Thank you. I'm glad to read your comments.

Could you elaborate on how you see my story as a mockery of the original Matrix?

And how is the Christian part of the story gone? I actually think my story reinforces it somewhat. In the Matrix Trilogy, Neo, the savior, sacrifices his life to save humanity; in my story he lives on through a kind of resurrection and afterlife in a world that exists beyond/outside the world he was born into. The new world is presided over by the Architect, who is the designer and overseer. Neo, Trinity, and the Architect form a sort of trinity of their own. And Neo finally arrives at an understanding and acceptance of his place in existence, a kind of Nirvanha or heaven.

Yes, the Matrix is a Trilogy. And I think it still functions as a Trilogy because the story of that world is complete. To me my story has no direct impact on the Trilogy itself, because my story transpires outside of that world. From the perspective of the people in the world of Zion, the machines, or the Matrix, my story doesn't exist. Essentially, they're separate realities, maybe even separate stories.

I'm glad you at least found the beginning of the story to be intriguing. You say I "added a lot of stuff that my story didn't need"; can you be more specific?

And I can understand how the ending could be disappointing because it ends a bit suddenly. Is that what you meant by the ending being "truly horrible"? Or did something else about it rub you the wrong way?

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/14/2007 2:53:15 AM
Gareth,

Always love it when people love it.

No fifth episode in the hopper, though. The only reason I'd write one is if the Wachowski brothers or Warner Brothers asked me to. And, right now...they're not.

This is my first screenplay. It was so intense and thrilling to create, I've decided to write one based solely on my own ideas. Hopefully, I'm not just a one-hit-wonder.

Thanks again for the glowing praise.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Joey DATE: 12/15/2007 3:30:20 AM

Very nice story! I quite enjoyed it and feel some comfort out of the story and where it left off. Interesting character stability with lock neo and morpheus. When the 'super matrix' idea was submitted it seemed pretty far-fetched and i was going to close this. I have it a few more scenes and was captured by the story-line. Good read for the open minded!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/15/2007 4:45:24 PM
Joey,

Glad you liked it. Let me know what you think of the ending.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Siju DATE: 12/15/2007 6:06:23 PM
I just finished reading it, and I think it was amazing. I would love seeing this being made into a 4th installment, and it would be interesting to find out how it shapes up. Yes, like some of them I too felt, that the extensive talking and explanation was tiring the pace. But looking back, I feel it is so, because it is in writing. If this is pulled together on the silver screen, the visually immaculate Matrix TM action scenes would serve as the icing to light up the whole stuff. I ofcourse had my share of questions unanswered - 1) Why/How does Smith return ? (Again & Again ??) 2) Your story reinforces something most Matrix fans fear - that Zion is a simulated world too - Is this true ? If so arent you offering the readers an anti climax so to say ? 3) It says Oracle advises Morpheus to pull Trinity out into Zion - Why would she do this, if she is aware that Trinity's purpose is take out Neo(the anomaly), since the code in Cortex is trying to get to him. Or have I got my understanding all wrong ? 4) The story tends to suggest that the war will begin again, and the fact that Neo Junior is in picture gives an indication that the system is cyclical, and that "there is no end", that Neo isnt born to end the war, but programmed to keep it going. Does that strip him off the "saviour" tag ? I would definitely put my money on this to be made into a movie. I think it would rock !! Great going man !! Would love to read anything more you pen !!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/15/2007 7:06:33 PM
Hi Siju,

So happy to hear you enjoyed it.

1) Smith survives because (at least according to my story) he was able to send more than one of his clones into Zion. The first clone (that the audience was made aware of) took over Bane's body; a second clone (that no one knew about, not even Bane, and that is introduced in my story) takes over Marouk's body. Bane is finally killed by Neo but Marouk survives and lives on in Zion until he sees his opportunity to return to the Matrix. Because Marouk is outside of the Matrix when Smith and the clones are destroyed, he is unaffected. When Marouk finally returns to the Matrix, he reverts back to a Smith and begins reconstructing an army.

2) Yes, I do say that Zion is a simulated world...BUT I go on to say that ALL worlds are

simulated and, therefore, they are all equally real. In my story one's experiences define reality-that's it, no more, no less. You can call a world virtual or real, it doesn't change its effect on you. For all we know the world you and I are living in right now could be simulated; does that mean it's not real to you, does that mean you're not being effected by it? Reality is an illusion and illusion is reality. It defines your existence no matter what.

3) Yes, I think you misunderstand a bit. No one when inside the Super Matrix knows anything that is happening outside of it. The Oracle, while inside the Super Matrix, is not aware that Trinity's purpose is to extract Neo. But she is set in motion to help facilitate that end. Her value (to the Source and the Architect) is that she can be programmed outside of the Super Matrix (through brain/memory manipulation) to believe certain things or perform certain tasks that she will then perform when she is in the Super Matrix. This is what gives her her Oracle status and ability to see the future.

4) Yes, I think the suggestion is that the war will begin again. But that's just a suggestion. It's left up to the imagination of the audience. The reason I like the open-ended nature of my conclusion is that happy endings rarely happen. Life is open-ended and always a bit scary. To me the world of the Matrix seems like it belongs more in that category. I don't think this strips Neo of the savior tag. Christ gave his life to save humanity's soul, and, despite the horrors that continue in our world, we still think of Christ as a savior because he gave his life to save others. In that respect Neo is still a savior.

Thanks for the comments, inquiries, etc.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Siju DATE: 12/15/2007 8:24:14 PM
Mr Wood,

Thanks for your response. It does answer my questions. A few more questions popped up:

1. What went wrong when Victor and Persephone entered the Super Matrix? What is the rationale behind Trinity attempting a similar entry when her parents, the very programmers of the Cortex, failed to sustain purpose ?
2. Has Neo's body physically existed at the Source always, and if so where ?
3. How does Rachel identify her lover as "Neo" ? He should be known to her as Thomas Anderson. She has also named her son as "Neo". How does this explain ?
4. The story has a real twist. The true exiles aren't human's like we always thought, they are 36s or androids rebelling for freedom from us. Does this displace parallel philosophies that the matrix storyline shares with the Bible ? Human's could either be the baddies, or could even be that right and wrong be dismissed as mere perceptions, and that machines were never entitled to the freedom they claim, and are to be slaves to their creators.

Thanks,
Siju

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Willem Thoonen DATE: 12/16/2007 8:26:29 PM

Dear P.D. Wood,

Just finished reading. Must say: Damn great! Love the different story lines and flashbacks - It all falls into place. I don't really like the title though: the super matrix. I understand the concept of a 'super' matrix, but well it doesn't feel like the title is it yet, but that's that. The story itself was just great, the way the characters speak, the choice of words are all truly as they should be (and I've seen the trilogy, quite a few times now :)). It all falls into place with the characters (I could really 'see' the characters speak the words provided in the story) Love the way it has bits and pieces of the second renaissance, if I remember correctly. Must say that you had me thinking at the end, and I'm (to be honest) glad you've provided the answers in you comment to JL Jenkins already (with regard to the boy smiling in the end and how the war with smith would continue :) . Like the setting of the environments to and really hope to see it full screen in the cinema!

Thank you for this great story! I hope the Wachowski brothers are up for it and are willing to look deeper "into the rabbit hole".

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/17/2007 1:50:52 AM

Siju,

You ask excellent questions. Luckily, I can answer most of them. Most of the rationale for how things happen in the story I left out because it was already getting heavy with exposition. But I did develop those ideas and explanations for people like yourself who simply could not rest without more detail.

1) As I state in the story, the Cortex is a living organ like a brain. To create the neural mass of the Cortex, a donor was needed from which the brain cells could be cloned. Persephone and Victor (The Merovingian), being the designers and builders of the Cortex, chose their infant daughter, Trinity, as the donor. The problem arises from this. Victor and Persephone now share genetic information in common with the Cortex. Their entry into the Cortex triggers some tragic and irreparable reaction due to this similarity but at the same time it also insulates and protects them. They are permanently stuck in the Super Matrix, but they don't die (which is the fate of others whose sequencing code changes when entering the Super Matrix). After the Architect figures out the cause of Persephone and Victor's mishap, he's able to make adjustments and prevent it from happening with Trinity (who shares the Cortex's genetic information, too). Hope that's not too convoluted an explanation. And I hope it seems plausible.

2) No, Neo's body has not previously physically existed at the Source. The body he inhabits in the Source is a clone body, built from information from his virtual profile. As I state in the story, he becomes the first virtual person to become a real person.

3) I may be wrong but I believe Neo went by the name Neo to his friends and to the computer/drug-hacker world he associated in. I assumed Rachel would have called him Neo. The only people who I remember calling him Mr. Anderson were Smith and his boss at his job. No?

4) Yes. YES! The flip of the machines being enslaved (with pockets of android resistance) I thought was quite thought-provoking and maybe not that far-fetched for our own future. Whether humans are seen as bad or good is open to debate. We created machines, so do we own them, have a right to do what we want with them? Or, once they're given artificial intelligence, do they become independent beings in their own right, entitled to all its freedoms? Hard questions.

As far as the Bible parallels are concerned, I think they still pertain to the original Trilogy story. Whether my story upsets those parallels, I think is also up for debate. Personally, I think my story enhances them. I think of the world of the Source and the Cortex as a sort of heaven or world beyond. I'm not sure how others will view it.

Anyway, I very much enjoyed answering your questions... most obviously, because I COULD. I hope my explanations weren't too vague or implausible.
PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/17/2007 2:00:47 AM
Willem Thoonen,

Happy to hear you enjoyed it.

Yes, the title, Super Matrix, has met with mixed reviews; too much like Super Man or something. Sounds a bit too hokey, I guess. I might end up calling it Matrix Rememory, as this was the title of the story that started me on the track to a fourth Matrix. People seem to like that title but, to me, it's not as punchy. We'll see.

Nice to know that the dialogue and storyline are convincing. Those are always hard to assess when writing the story.

The ideas and storyline from the Second Renaissance (Animatrix movies) may touch upon some of my story, but remember...in terms of my story, the Matrix archives are just another virtual creation like everything else in the Super Matrix. This is a crucial distinction. Whatever happened or is described in the Matrix archives has nothing to do with events that happen in the real world of the Source and the Cortex. Except for references to or flashbacks from Zion, the Matrix and the machine world, my story is a completely separate entity.

If you're curious, I've added more explanations in the comments section in the past few days; they might give you more insight into some of my ideas.

I'd really like to see it full screen, too!

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Siju DATE: 12/17/2007 11:13:16 AM

Thank you Mr Wood, it really clarifies.

I would like to have your thoughts on something. Being a matrix fan, I have always been inspired by the messiah story, the story of a man who is destined to save the world sorts. Your story upsets that emotional link, and instead makes the whole story a staged one. The prophecy is true, but not for the goodness of the end it proposes, but for the multiple programs designed to make it happen. The One carries the hope of the last survivors, people who unknowingly are only virtuals, but real like you profess, backed by their genuine experience of reality. There is a feeling that "œreal" people are set in a cyclic struggle system, blinded from the truth, and one from which there is no escape. On a broader sense, I would understand the need of the entire system to subdue any possibility of a machine uprising. From an emotional perspective, a set of believers like me, would have to shift to another paradigm, to accept the essence of the "œSuper Matrix". Atleast from my standpoint, majority of the audience connects emotionally with the people of Zion, and there in lies the greatest challenge of telling them this story.

Just a food for thought. :) Personally, I have made that paradigm shift, and I did that because your story helps answer the many questions that Revolutions threw open. Great story !!

Thanks,
Siju

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/17/2007 9:06:31 PM

Siju,

Your statement is, "There is a feeling that "œreal" people are set in a cyclic struggle system, blinded from the truth, and one from which there is no escape." As relates to my story, yes, I think that is an accurate statement... but only from the point of view of the audience and of those who live outside of the Super Matrix. Step away from the story for a moment and look at our world. I would submit that the world in which you and I live is engaged in a cyclic struggle system, too, where we are blinded from the truth (i.e. what happens after death) and from which there is no escape (except by death itself). I guess if we knew that there was another world beyond our own that dictated the events of our lives, we might feel that an emotional link has been upset. But we are not privy to that realization, just as the people in Zion and the machine world are not privy to the existence of the Super Matrix and the world that created it.

One of the dynamics that the Wachowski brothers set up and with which I disagree is that the world in the Matrix is not real. The intensity of that dynamic is embodied in the trivialization of harming or killing people. Throughout the Trilogy people in the Matrix are routinely ripped to shreds or riddled with bullets. Because that world is considered

just a computer construct, we feel no "emotional link" or empathy for those murdered people. But I say it's all real. The world of the Matrix, the Super Matrix, and the Source (all three layers) deserve as much emotional link as any other unknown worlds that may (and probably do) extend into or beyond them.

To me Morpheus and Niobe (in the Super Matrix) are no less deserving of an emotional link than Neo and Trinity (in the Source). To be able to accept this, one has to see the validity and "realness" of all worlds, whether infinitesimally small, inexplicably large, virtual, simulated, etc. As I've said, reality is defined by what one experiences, no more and no less. If an audience can accept this, then my story doesn't abandon the emotional connection with the people of Zion or any other people.

What do you think of all that?

And I'm quite excited that you like the story so much. Cheers!

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Siju DATE: 12/18/2007 7:13:52 PM

Two things:

- 1) Please keep us updated on the progress on getting some attention from the Warner Bros Studio. You talked about hitting a lead there. I'm excited about any possibility that a movie could materialize !! :)
- 2) If this doesn't make it to the screen, try getting this out as a comic. I don't know what copyright issues this means, but I think a comic would be pretty cool. I bet there are a bunch of kids who'd love to connect to this story, and they'd love a comic to a screenplay anyday.

This definitely isn't "just" fan fiction material, and shouldn't stay that way for long, and that's why most of us would hope to watch it as a movie someday!

Cheers!

Siju

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/18/2007 10:12:10 PM

Siju,

Thanks for all the attention and kind words. If anything solid develops, I'll definitely post it. I'm interested in pursuing any options at this point. Keep your fingers crossed.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Camryn DATE: 12/26/2007 5:19:13 AM

I just got done reading your script and it was really good. Some of the lines in there the characters would probably never say in the movies. I was wondering if you could help me with a few questions in the story. 1. Can u explain what smith does at the machine world and how he gets there. 2. Who is serena the oracle in the matrix or morpheus's mom? 3. Neo is living in a clone bodying in the real world? 4. What bodies do morpheus and zion have.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/27/2007 4:26:45 AM
Camryn,

Glad you enjoyed it.

I think if you browse through the existing comments, most of your questions will be answered. If not, I suggest you reread the story; my guess is that a second pass should reveal them. The explanations are there.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Said A DATE: 1/14/2008 1:17:38 AM

I have been a Matrix fan for such a long time, i've studied the philosophy, wrote papers about the metaphysics of the matrix, but what you have done..amazes me. You Page 24 of 279 94207_86967_1â€“2â€“2012 1/2/12 4:57 PM have taken this to a new level, and i thank you. I so desperately wanted to see a Matrix 4, and you have made that possible with this screen play. This screen play is amazing and if it ever gets turned into a movie, will be phenomenal. I plan on reading Rememory as well.

Thank you for keeping the Matrix story alive and going.

P.S I just read what the super matrix is and it is MIND BLOWING, i would never have gussed it.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/14/2008 1:30:32 AM
Said A,

You and I both would love to see it become a movie. I've been trying to find the right contact inside the movie world, but that's a tall order.

I'm glad you found it so amazing.

If you read Matrix Rememory, just keep in mind that it came before The Super Matrix

story; the Super Matrix uses much of what was in Rememory but moves beyond that to the big climax. Hope you like that one, too.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Said A. DATE: 1/15/2008 2:20:56 AM

Just finished it and I love it. I wish it was longer, only took me 2 hours to read it. There were some ideas that confused me, but I will re-read it once i'm done with rememory and see if i can understand it better.

Are you planning on writing any more stories?

PLEASE write more. Write another script, write a series. Just keep the Matrix story alive!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/15/2008 2:50:33 AM

Said A,

Glad you found it so satisfying. Yes, a second read should clarify much. You might also sift through other comments on the site; I answer a lot of other people's questions there.

I will be writing more...but not in the Matrix vein, probably. I want to bring my own stories to creation without always feeling that it's built on someone else's work. But...there are many fan fiction sites out there brimming with ideas. No shortage of that if you are looking for it.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mike Madness DATE: 1/17/2008 5:56:03 PM

I think the script to the 4th part is amazing. It opens a whole new spectrum of point of views. It's like the first one which took you somewhere you would never expect. I think this one would definitely bring the idea of the "matrix" to a whole new horizon. I saw the first one the first day it came out and after reading the 4th script i must say satisfying it filled the void of questions surrounding what after? I honestly think this script should should stay as is and not be altered.

I must say THANKS...

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/17/2008 8:36:11 PM

Mike Madness,

The phrase, "I honestly think this script should should stay as is and not be altered," is one that a writer rarely hears. There's always something that people would like to

change. I'm not sure this script is without fault (even I feel somethings could be better), but I'll take your kind words in the spirit that they're given and with the knowledge that such words may not come again any time soon.

I'm still working on the possibility that the scripts I've sent out may catch the attention of the movie making industry. It would be fun to see it on the big screen.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: werewolf DATE: 1/26/2008 7:55:06 AM

hey if you turn this in to a movie
please please please let me be in it.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood EMAIL: thesupermatrix@comcast.net IP: 24.34.95.13
URL: DATE: 1/26/2008 2:23:14 PM werewolf,

I'll take that as an positive endorsement.

OK...when it all comes together, you'll be the first person to audition...OK?

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mario DATE: 2/6/2008 5:20:12 PM

Hi Wood,

firs i want to say...WOW!!

I LOVED the why u wrote the screenplay...very nice story...when(not if) this hits the screen...i think i will be as big as the firs(the best) part...maybe even bigger.

I only have one small critic and that is a small conflict between the original love story between Neo and Trinity and yours. In the original story she tells him that she is in love with him and that the oracle told her that she would fall in love with a dead men.(she said that when he died)...and in your story u say that she started to fall in love with him while she was watching him (from the real word as i understood).

so i think that this creates a small conflict between the two love stories and maybe u could make some small changes.

On example what if she went into the matrix to kill him..but while she was watching him from the matrix she started to fall in love with him and that is what changed her mind to extract him from the matrix as a new life from.

well i hope u'll look into this..or tell me if i understood it wrong.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood

Thank you.

Thank you, thank you. Comments have been a bit slow recently. So I'm giving you 3 "thank you"s.

I must not have been clear enough in my story about a very important distinction (since this confusion has come up before). Here is the explanation I gave to the commenter, Siju, a while back on essentially the same point.

<<3) No one, when inside the Super Matrix, knows anything that is happening outside of it. The Oracle, while inside the Super Matrix, is not aware that Trinity's purpose is to extract Neo and bring him out of the Super Matrix. But she is set in motion to help facilitate that end. Her value (to the Source and the Architect) is that she can be programmed outside of the Super Matrix (through brain/memory manipulation) to believe certain things or perform certain tasks that she will then perform when she is in the Super Matrix. This is what gives her her Oracle status and ability to see the future.
>>

Similarly, Trinity, when inside the Super Matrix, has no awareness of anything beyond Zion, the machine world, and the Matrix. When she enters the Super Matrix, she retains no memory that her mother is Persephone, her father is the Merovingian, or her grandfather is the Architect; all her memories of that part of her life (ie, the real world) are temporarily shut off. This is why she has no recollection of having fallen in love with Neo in the world outside the Super Matrix. To her and to everyone in the original Matrix Trilogy, there is no awareness of the Super Matrix.

I hope that clears it up a bit. Let me know.

Thanks again. Oops! That's 4 "thank you"s. Oh well.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mario EMAIL: mariotodorovski@yahoo.com IP: 87.177.194.77
URL: DATE: 2/6/2008 10:19:04 PM well...thx for clearing thigs up :D
and thank you for the 4 "thank you"s ;)

i said it befor, i'll say it again...i LOVE the way u wrote the screenplay.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood URL: DATE: 2/6/2008 10:40:49 PM

Thank you # 5

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Sinningslave DATE: 2/12/2008 5:30:06 PM
This is the one of the best screen plays iv ever read :D
Very kewl

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood URL: DATE: 2/12/2008 5:54:42 PM
Sinningslave,

Thanks.

I guess I hope you've read a lot of screenplays.

If so, I'm glad it found it's way to the top of your list.

Do you have any contacts in the industry?

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mark Slavens DATE: 2/17/2008 1:32:16 AM

Im definitely interested in a Matrix 4 but not in a prequel. So many times movies get screwed up by a half ass attempt to answer questions or make a low budget response to a high budget/quality movie. I would love to see a Matrix 4 but it should be an actual Sequel and it should have the same characters and incredible fighting. and continue from the end...please dont even give people ideas of turning this into some half baked chick flick crap.

Sorry the prequel idea is the worst idea I can think of. And I dont even think i would pay to see it.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 2/17/2008 1:33:55 AM

Mark,

I couldn't agree more; a Matrix 4 should be high quality and high budget with mostly the same characters and some incredible fighting. This is basically what I think I've created. In my opinion it's not just some half-baked prequel; it really is a sequel that also answers some questions about the history of certain characters. And it does pick up exactly where Matrix Revolutions left off. I strongly urge you to read it and then I'd be glad to respond to any comments (critical or praising) you have.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Stephen Koscelansky DATE: 2/19/2008 7:12:26 PM

I liked the story yes, but I was always confused, even reading it over and over... I think it is just me though.. The ending was unexpected also. I think though the way Morpheous was talking was not like he was in the movie, he was more "Normal" other than that, good read.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 2/19/2008 7:35:30 PM

Stephen,

I'm glad you liked it even though it was confusing to you. I suggest you read some of the other comments left on my website; they clarify some points that others had trouble with.

It can be hard to keep the story threads straight because the time line jumps around a lot. Somehow I think the screenplay would be easier to follow as a movie, where a

device like (just as an example) going back and forth from black and white to color when there are flashbacks would keep the viewer more oriented to the flow of events.

And Morpheus, yes, I tried to tone him down a bit. If you think about where his mind is in my story, it kind of makes sense. In the previous three movies his sole purpose in life was to find and train Neo to save humanity. Now that purpose is gone. Also, (at least as far as he knows in my story) Trinity and Neo are dead; two of his closest friends are gone. And more, the threat of the machines is not completely gone and there is no savior on the horizon. Given these changes to his life, I figured Morpheus had to change quite a bit. Anyway, that's my rationale.

When you say the ending was unexpected, what part of the ending were you referring to?

Thanks for the read and the comments.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Shaun DATE: 2/23/2008 4:25:05 PM

Just finished reading this and I have to say, I thoroughly enjoyed it.

Towards the beginning of the story, I was becoming increasingly annoyed with the breaks in the story for the flash backs (which is odd to say, coming from someone who loves LOST).

Once the story went on and the relevance of the flashbacks made more sense, I enjoyed them as well. I suspect if I were to reread this story, I'd enjoy the flashbacks throughout the entire story.

The flashbacks and simultaneous story lines between the matrix/supermatrix and outside of the supermatrix seems a bit hard to do in text, however I think you did as well of a job as any.

I do think the entire story would be easier to follow in the form of a movie due to the simultaneous story lines and flashbacks.

The only other comment I wanted to make was on the ending. After reading through several comments on here about people hating how it ended, I have to say, I disagree completely.

Theres was no real way for the Matrix to "end" in my opinion. While I'd like to hear some of the backstory on how Morpheus, Lock, and Niobi were inserted into the SuperMatrix, I'm fine left wondering.

I was very satisfied after reading this episode, a feeling I didn't have after the third episode ended. I haven't read any other Matrix 4 screenplays, and I probably won't. I'm content imagining this is how the Matrix ended and will leave it at that.

Great job!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 2/23/2008 5:08:25 PM

Shaun,

Yes, creating effective flashbacks while maintaining the continuity of the story was definitely the hardest part of writing this screenplay. I'm glad you worked through them so you could enjoy the many juicy surprises. As a movie, I agree, I think the story would be much more fluid. I encourage you to give it a second fast read, as I think a lot of new details and connections will appear. It's hard to pick it all up the first time through since earlier scenes get added depth by things that are revealed later in the movie.

There seem to be two schools of thought on movie endings, the school that wants closure and the school that likes open-ended continuity. Personally, I like both, depending on the story. With the Matrix story it seemed almost antithetical to give it a clear ending.

Thanks for the specific comments and appreciation.

Let's hope we can see this movie in the theaters someday.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mitchell DATE: 2/25/2008 3:13:39 AM

I loved this. I read it in one sitting, it's simply amazing and it answered many questions. You could make Neo's son older, maybe a teenager. You could also make Mourok/Smith's reentry to the Matrix a little longer or make his awarness to these new powers a bit longer.

There is a very good potential for this to become something. Maybe a t.v. series, like the current Terminator.

I love to see this in a much longer and more detailed anime version. An anime series will be amazing with this screenplay. What animatrix did for Reloaded, but instead of 9 episodes, say 50 or more, then culminate with a movie.

This would be soooooo amazing in Anime version, with some animation like Karas.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 2/25/2008 3:33:15 AM

Mitchell,

You're right, there's potential for so much more in this story. But I like the idea that it has an ending, open-ended as it is. That's just me, I guess.

I'd be content if the Wachowski brothers just dropped me a dime and said, "Nice job!". Of course, making it into a movie would be the best. I'm still working on that possibility.

Anyway, thanks for the kind words. Glad you enjoyed it so much.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Micheal DATE: 3/5/2008 4:02:09 AM

I have had many, MANY, Ideas, add-ons and various revelations in the matrix franchise. Neo, Trinity, and Morpheus all have special places in the world that is the matrix. i have also had many instances where i believe that my ideas would have held some weight in the fictionous world. be that as it may, your story starts off interesting enough... I do wish to make some personal comments, more logical practice should be implemented in the whole Mind over matter that neo exhibits for instance... there should be more code screens (just an idea mind you) if neo changes something that dramatically changes the environment, the code that is neo's nervous system should have a single code change from his brain and run through his body (lets say a gold bit of code) and it starts small emanating from his brain through his nervous system (think of the code screen view) and outward through the "real" world and his focus (energy, gravity) warps the code around him (air, floor, wall, being, animal) thus changing to gold with a "new" set of supposed rules thus being easily manipulated by neo himself but only until the matrix resets its self restoring order to be governed by a computer term known as clicks *the faster the clicks the more the computer checks its settings type deal*... (kinda like the dude protecting the oracle) well that's the idea... and the SUPER MATRIX... well i can't tell you what to name it but here's an idea or two... the Matrix:Evolutions *though redundant* it great describes the change that happens in the trilogy, or the matrix:reconstructed...just a thought, but the super matrix... unsure.. again its a personal thing.. no need to pay any attention to what i believe should be the title, hope to hear from you take it easy... and if you do happen to meet the cast tell them Micheal from Texas says hi... :)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/5/2008 9:28:32 PM

Hi Micheal from Texas,

I'll be glad to tell the cast "hi" for you, if you can set up the meeting. I've been trying to break through the Hollywood maze with this script, but no luck so far. Anyone with connections, let me know.

Yes, the name.... I know, Super Matrix sounds so much like Super Man or something; it throws so people. But on the other hand it's got a lot of zap to it and it's pretty well descriptive of the underlying premise of the story. I thought maybe Matrix Revelations (too close to Revolutions?) or even Matrix Rememory (a kind of looking back, sequel /prequel kind of flavor). Matrix Evolutions and Matrix Reconstructed are good, too, but still, they don't have the force of the Super Matrix. It's gotta be something that pops! IMHO

I'm glad you like the story. The logical practice of implementing the "mind over matter" stuff is, I think, something the director of the movie would probably want to control. I

didn't put too much of that in the script because I figured it would just get changed later. Your suggestions are good, though. If it ever makes it to production (and people ask me for my opinion), I'll keep your ideas in mind (over matter...hee, hee.)

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Micheal DATE: 3/6/2008 7:45:39 AM

I was pleased to see such a expedited response... and technically I am not from texas, just kinda ran into a mix up of conglomerated instances that led me to believe that i have met the "cast" in the lone star state, (lets just say if my assumptions are correct, life as we know it ceases to make any sense given the sum of the parts governing the rich and famouse) however i do have some insite on who to talk too (if i can set up the trip) Carrie Ann Moss is a private person indeed. But i have given plenty of feed back (while on my stay in texas) to such individuals on my view of the Matrix movie... so that my story doesn't fall too close to the cookoo tree. i have had the chance to ride along with person in question to the WB lot, where they house the cast and crew of various WB productions.. though i don't fall in good standing (long story) I dont see the harm in presenting said script so that the right people can read it. The situation within this very lucretive realm is iffy at best, simply cause i was never really told who i met that day *mostly that the people where the Son and Daughter* who they where and what they did was a mystery. as was the entire ordeal of socializing myself with theses individuals.... all i know is that on a personal level, there is a connection between who i have met in my life and me being there at that point in time in my life... I do know that this person lives in this way under private circumstances, and that they must have their rights respected... but i will deffinatly keep your script in mind if the oppertunity ever arises. mainly my HI to the cast was just to see if surpize ever entered their faces. i hope you make it with this script... i would love to see this movie actually finished.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/6/2008 9:19:18 PM

Micheal,

My pleasure.

Carrie Ann Moss. Well, that would be something. The story does revolve around her character to a large degree, so perhaps she would be interested. Any attempt would be appreciated. I'd love to see this movie produced, too.

Thanks. I'll keep my fingers crossed. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: michael DATE: 3/12/2008 10:25:34 AM

yes it's been a while. and i never said it was her, though be it befitting. Most would consider me one very lucky mofo..... however, lets put aside inuendos for a moment [think what you will] reality desperatly needs to come crawling back to the recesses of my brain. I apologize if i seem disturbed but thoes memories of yesteryear plauge me, pathetically. If the nerve revitalises, i may venture on a third attempt to rectify my issues surrounding the mystery. I only can pray that i would have testicular fortitude to resolve the aforementioned. All in all the formalities still seem spacy. ill keep this in

mind since the person in question may very well still be attainable. Just have get back out there is all.btw u might wanna check your authentication script or whatever since even though you type the code indicated above it asks several times to re-enter, basically its a crap shoot.us

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Tinu DATE: 3/13/2008 8:06:20 PM Hello P D,

First of all, I would like to clarify that unlike most people who have expressed their views here, I am quite satisfied by the way the actual trilogy ended. And i could not imagine to watch another sequel even if it was created by the Wachowski brothers themselves. So when i came across your site it was with a kinda vengeance that i dloaded the pdf....but no longer had i gone thru the first 5 pages i have to admit tht i was hooked....the idea of a super matrix enthralled me....and i really have to give you credit for coming up with an ideology tht humans were in control of the machines all along...Also another thing tht floored me was the way you twisted the characters (Merovingian and Persephone being Trinity's parents) without any insecurities regarding disloyalty towards the original.....and yet pulling it off!! hats off to you....

Some of the shortcomings (u dont have to necessarily worry about them, they r just an amateur's view of things) I found were:

- 1) morpheus and niobe shud've been given more screen time.
- 2) the present scenario regarding the android 36 is not mentioned clearly.
- 3) the architect in your story totally contradicts the one in the original (i know thts the way its supposed to be according to you) but i guess it will be hard for the ppl to digest...
- 4) Neo seems to be less flustered by the fact tht everything tht he ever did in the matrix amounted to saving a world tht was being controlled by the same ppl he was trying to save in the first place

But ignoring all difference of opinion it seems as if you might've got something there....maybe not deep enough for the Wachowski brothers to fathom but big enough to make matrix fans want more....

Regards,
Tinu.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/13/2008 9:38:58 PM
Tinu,

Well that takes the cake! Pulling someone over from the "I liked it just the way it ended, don't add another thing" side to the "Hey, man, that rocks!" side is really saying something. I take that as the highest praise. And just to let you know, I probably would never have attempted writing this unless I thought I could come up with something that could do justice to the original Trilogy. You've shown me that I succeeded. Thanks.

1) morpheus and niobe shud've been given more screen time.
Absolutely. Damn that screenplay page limitation!

2) the present scenario regarding the android 36 is not mentioned clearly.
Yeah, it could definitely be more fleshed out. I might have to work on that. Again,

though...damn that screenplay page limitation! (gotta trim it.)

3) the architect in your story totally contradicts the one in the original (i know thts the way its supposed to be according to you) but i guess it will be hard for the ppl to digest...

You have to remember that the Architect in the original Trilogy is totally unaware of the Architect in my story. It's sort of like a two way mirror; people outside the Super Matrix can see in but not the other way around. What I particularly like is that the Architect in my story is like God looking in on his own devilish counterpart. They are the savior and the destroyer at the same time. Kinda chewy, I'd say. Yes, they contradict each other; but that's what I like about them. It might be hard for others to swallow; hard to say.

4) Neo seems to be less flustered by the fact tht everything tht he ever did in the matrix amounted to saving a world tht was being controlled by the same ppl he was trying to save in the first place

I think that's partly because specific people in the Super Matrix (such as Niobe, Morpheus, Lock) are there willingly, giving their lives for the cause. Yes, Neo could feel more betrayed, I suppose, but I feel he sees the justice of the charade, a necessary evil in a human world locked into an existence with intelligent machines. He also comes to accept that the world in the Super Matrix is real, and so, therefore, not just a lie. And, of course, Trinity is with him again. That takes the edge off.

Well, I could go on and on. Thanks for your insights and involvement. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: R. Shelby EMAIL: ryan.shelby@hotmail.com IP: 67.149.132.55
URL: DATE: 3/19/2008 3:04:05 AM I think in order for the 4th Matrix to be successful, it would have to be a plot that was in no way similar to the original 3, and a story that didn't continue the trilogy, but clarified some of BS from the original 3 movies.

I like this story, but all the same problems I had with the original matrix movies still exist.

For instance, I can never except the reason for the Matrix was because they needed to use humans for batteries.

Instead of simply building solar collectors above the clouds or in outerspace, apparently it's easier to build a cocoon for millions of humans and then go through the trouble of feeding and removing their waste on a daily basis. In addition, they found it "more feasible" to hook these millions of people to a virtual world called The Matrix in order to "control them", when they could have simply snapped their necks to render them brain dead while keeping their bodies a live. Obviously this can't be the best way to obtain energy, so why not make the 4th movie about how they finally get a clue.

I think if there was a Matrix 4, it would need to clear up these stupid premises that

never made sense, but people just bought into because they liked the plot.

So here's my plot for the 4th movie.

The machine world is very close to developing an alternate power source that will eventually eliminate their need for humans. The movie begins with the machines in outer space building these solar Page 33 of 279 94207_86967_1â€“2â€“2012 1/2/12 4:57 PM collectors that will beam the energy to the surface.

As the Machines become closer to completing the project, they begin plans to pull the plug on The Matrix since they will no longer depend on humans for their power needs. This would mean that every human plugged into the Matrix will die, and soon after they will just kill everyone in Zion since peace is no longer necessary.

Because of their desire for their own self-preservation, the programs within the Matrix fear for their existence, and so they decide to join forces with the humans in order to stop the Machines from pulling the plug, thus becoming allies in a war between the Machine world and the human / Matrix program alliance.

As the programs in the Matrix help release humans from the Matrix, the human army of Zion grows larger and larger until they eventually have the numbers to go head to head against the machines and prevent them from completing their new power source.

I don't know, that's just my thought.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/19/2008 10:21:18 AM R.
Shelby,

I tend to agree with you about the idea of "humans as batteries". Taken literally, it's a tough sell. In general though, I take ideas like that in stride by looking at them as metaphors. The underlying theme is that humans are dominated by machines and have been thrust into a make-believe world; the human's dilemma is to escape from this world and regain control of their destiny. Since I like this theme so much, I suspend my belief just enough to get over the "humans as batteries" concept.

It seems that your idea for a fourth Matrix doesn't really get rid of the "humans as batteries" concept, so much as builds on top of it in an attempt to climb up out of it. I do, however, like the basic idea of humans and programs in the Matrix teaming up together to overthrow the machines; it sets up a nice dynamic.

Maybe you should write a fourth episode, too.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Lindsey DATE: 3/30/2008 8:32:06 PM

i love the screen play, but i am kind of confused. Are trinity and Neo still together, and did trinity always know that neo had a son, and is she okay with it. Do morphius and all them know that neo and trinity are alive. And lastly when neo woke up at the beginning about the supermatrix... i dont really get what that is...how do the matrix, the supermatrix and the real world fit in. Is the supermatrix what neo was told was the real world in the other three movies...please explain

ps... I absolutely love the matrix... and keanu...bravo

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/30/2008 8:56:42 PM
Lindsey,

Happy to hear that you enjoyed it. I suggest you take a look at the three pages of comments on my website; I have a feeling you'll find the answers there. If not, let me know, and I'll be glad to clarify.

Thanks for the thumbs up. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: thanos DATE: 4/2/2008 1:56:44 PM
Excellent writing! You have a great style that is your own. My advice would be to create your own original work. Trying to write a follow up to Matrix is akin to writing a "7th Brandenburg Concerto" or a sequel to the "I Ching". Matrix trilogy is an absolute philosophical masterpiece.
U2 is a great band but if they wrote what they thought would be the next Beatles album after "Let it Be" it would be outright offensive. This isn't just another "Alien" or "Jaws" movie. Matrix is sacred ground.If you haven't read these you should:
http://wylfing.net/essays/matrix_reloaded.html

Matrix is an important work as it brings most of the concepts from western religion and eastern philosophy - which are usually told through ancient mythology (Bible, I Ching etc..)to a modern setting. Just like the Bhagavad-Gita, the story of Krishna's counsel in the time of war which taught eastern philosophy through these stories to millions, the Matrix trilogy does this for our generation and probably for decades/centurys to come. If you don't think this is true read the essays first.

With that in mind it's hard to imagine wanting to "add" on to such a story. At least not without a few decades of INTENSE study on philosophy/theology/mythology like the W brothers had.

You've done such a great job in your own way! That story just doesn't belong in the Matrix trilogy/quadrilogy(?) But not for lack of talent on your part. It's because nobody can compare to the WB at their own game.

anyway, write some new stuff, you have mad talent!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/2/2008 8:40:46 PM
Thanos,

Considering that you think the Trilogy shouldn't be touched, I find great encouragement in your comments about my writing. And, yes, I have every intention of moving forward on a project of my own.

I didn't mean to in any way diminish the impact or greatness of the Trilogy by writing another episode. My intention was only to expand on a fantastic work. But I understand your point and, as I've said, I am moving on to something of my own creation. Hopefully, I can achieve a similar level of quality.

Mad talent. Oh yeah...I like that!

Thanks for the banter. PD Wood

And I'll definitely check out those essays.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Hassan Smith DATE: 4/4/2008 8:45:05 PM

This was very well thought out. I just finished today and I really did enjoy it. It does tend to bend the mind a bit but it makes in accordance to what we already know about the trilogy. I have trouble envisioning the architect as a character with any emotion outside of smug superiority. You did a good job weaving the relationships together, the Locke-Morpheus thing gelled with me but the relationship with Trinity, Merv, and Persephone didn't fit. This is based on her response to them in part 2 and 3. Had she been less aggressive in her interactions, you would have had the perfect fit. Was she somehow washed of her memory of them when she came in contact with them? I really liked the advent of the 36 androids, great concept. You took the reader a lot of different places and I would love to see this on screen. I am a big fan of the Martial Arts, so the only thing I would have wanted more of is that, and Neo flying of course. I also have the picture of a different Oracle in mind. After the original actress passed, that character seems a bit interchangeable to me. Overall, though, I would pitch this thing and pitch it hard if you haven't already. I heard the brothers are selling the franchise, do you know what the status is? Also, do you think there is a possibility of a part 4 in our lifetime? Thanks for putting your time into this.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/5/2008 1:30:12 AM

Hassan,

Happy to hear you enjoyed it.

I think, though, that you missed a very important point about the story. It seems I need to work on making it easier to understand.

Inside the virtual worlds of the the Matrix and the Super Matrix absolutely nobody has knowledge of the real world beyond.

The real world is the one that has conquered the machines and is comprised of the Source, the Cortex, the world divided up into districts, the android 36s, the President,

etc.

In this real world the Architect, known as Alex Strong, is a very good man. The Merovingian, known as Victor at this point, is the son of the Architect. He is also a good person and is married to Persephone. They are the two main chemical engineers responsible for creating the neural brain called the Cortex that houses the Super Matrix. They have a daughter, Trinity. They are all good people and related by family.

All people in the real world have an identical looking counterpart in the virtual world. They can assume the role of their counterpart at any time if circumstances demand it. When people from the real world enter the Super Matrix or the Matrix, their knowledge of the real world is temporarily switched off (not erased or washed).

The Architect's virtual counterpart is the evil leader of the machines. Implicit is the idea that the Architect, being the most important person in the real world, will never enter the Matrix and assume the role of his virtual counterpart. As such, his bad virtual counterpart is allowed to be the antithesis of the real good Architect. In the Matrix the bad Architect has no relationship to Victor, Persephone, or Trinity.

Victor and Persephone's virtual counterparts just happen to be ordinary people in the Matrix. These virtuals have no relationship to Trinity or the Architect.

In the process of leaving the real world and entering the Matrix, the real Victor and Persephone are transformed in some unintended way which also makes them unable to ever be pulled back out into the real world. They quickly become corrupted by the powers they have brought with them. Victor, soon after, likening himself to a king, takes on the Merovingian name.

So, again, in the Matrix, Trinity is not nor has she ever been the daughter of the Merovingian and Persephone or the granddaughter of the Architect. Likewise, in the Matrix the Architect is not nor has he ever been the father of the Merovingian or the grandfather of Trinity.

I hope this clarifies the story for you and gives it more cohesiveness. I think as a movie the ideas I'm trying to convey would be easier to understand. I hope so, anyway. Otherwise, it's back to the drawing board.

Yes, I love the android 36s, too. These machines are now the underdogs fighting against the repressive humans. The roles are reversed, and, to a certain extent, we feel some sympathy for the plight of the machines. Makes you think.

Many people have wished for more action (me included). The story is very chatty (although still, I think, engaging) and needs a bit more visual motion spice. So I'm working on trying to inject more action and martial arts into the story as a whole. I may have to sacrifice some chatty scenes to make room for the additional action (screenplay page limitations are very strict!). If you or any one out there can tell me which scenes are superfluous or at least not absolutely necessary, I'd be much obliged.

I'm doing a last rewrite and will pitch it this summer. And, no, I hadn't heard that they were selling the franchise. Where did you hear that? On the internet?

Thanks again for the comments and support. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: bendito DATE: 4/25/2008 3:09:44 AM
there will be another trilogy in about a decade... just like starwars.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/25/2008 12:16:50 PM
I really hope it's sooner than that.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Stephen DATE: 4/27/2008 3:47:47 AM
In really hope there is a 4th Matrix. Whether the W. Brothers expand on ideas from your script or not, I would love to see a 4th movie. It's not often that a movie is made that pleases the eyes and mind. Who would have thought it possible that a scifi flick would have a deep spiritual meaning? I wish that people like us could actually influence the W. brother's decision to make another Matrix film. I've heard there may be a script already. I hope it will be put to good use. Heck, even if they wrote a book or series of new books expanding on the ideas of the Matrix trilogy, I'd definitely be an interested reader.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/27/2008 3:06:27 PM
I'd love to see a fourth, too. But, personally, I'd like it to end there. If it goes on for too long, it can become very homogenized. I like the compactness of a finite package.

Where did you hear about a script for a fourth episode already in the works? I haven't heard anything like that.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Stephen DATE: 4/27/2008 4:37:04 PM
Below is an excerpt from an article I've recently read...:

When the time came to put together a sequel, according to a variety of sources, including Wikipedia and IMDB, several concepts and script treatments were developed, but most knocked back by Warner for further revision. As time developed, rumor has it that the Wachowski's had written one script, which was way too long. Rather than sacrifice certain scenes, they decided to divide the script in half.

So, essentially speaking, Reloaded and Revolutions were initially conceived as ONE film, not TWO. Which goes forth to say that perhaps there were and/or are plans for a third screenplay, Page 37 of 279 94207_86967_1â€“2â€“2012 1/2/12 4:57 PM or now in hindsight, a fourth film. Â© 1999-2008 Greg Davies

... Who knows if this is true or not???

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/27/2008 8:16:15 PM

Hmm,

Thanks for the heads up. Let's hope it happens.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Carlos Sousa DATE: 4/27/2008 10:38:16 PM

Hello, I finished reading the pdf ... and as far as a Matrix fan goes, I thought I was reading an official script from the 'bros ... sincerely.

It completely makes sense if you think in the prequel / sequel kind of way.

Hats off for this super matrix approach. I also gave it some thought, after watching Revolutions, that something was missing, but far from me to find this little gem from another Matrix fan.

Curiously, I was listening to Rob Dougan's "Furious Angels" at a really loud pace which kinda put me in the mood. I read the 120 pages in about 20 minutes, and they seem like a lifetime.

Congrats on this job, and if a poll comes up for this story to make it to a #4Matrix ... i'll be there, be sure of it.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/28/2008 1:07:46 AM

Carlos,

That's some tasty feedback. Can't ask for more than that.

Right now, all my efforts are geared towards trying to find an agent to read it and pitch it to Hollywood or the Wachowski brothers. The more I learn, though, the more I realize that the only way to get an agent to read it, is if it gets a personal referral from someone the agent knows. Ninety-nine percent of the time query letters and cold calls are a dead end.

So I'm putting the call out to everyone to help me get it into the hands of an agent. It's probably the only way it has a chance of being made into a real movie. Let's hope somebody out there has got the goods.

And thanks again for the kind words.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: David Curtis DATE: 5/2/2008 3:09:02 AM

On the web there is much speculation about whether Neo is alive or dead, but I want to assure you there is a very clear answer within the films that leaves no doubt what the real answer is. No speculation involved. But first thanks for writing this, I love what you did. THANKS!

The answer is given by the Oracle in the first film, "The Matrix" during which the Oracle told Neo that he would have to make a choice between saving his own life or that of Morpheus. On the surface most equate that to the rescue attempt from the high security building later in that episode, but that was NOT what the Oracle was referring to.

Want proof?

All the answers are given right in the Trilogy itself. Keep Reading....

Could the oracle see into the future? Through encrypted language she dodges the answer, but at the end of the third film the answer is made very clear that it was intended to be a definite YES!

During the third film right before Smith consumes the Oracle turning her into another Smith, she asks about the little girl, and Smith replies with words the Oracle had told the little girl which no one else could have over heard regarding the cookies.

Then at the end of the film at the close of the fight between Neo and Smith Smith suddenly begins to freak out and remember seeing that moment before. He has a sort of deja vu experience.

Here is the clincher, It was not Smith who had seen that moment before it was the Oracle. How do we know that? Because he quotes her, "Everything that has a beginning must also have an ending."

Those were the words the Oracle spoke to Neo during their last encounter together in the third film.

The Oracle knew all along that this moment was going to happen, she knew that Neo would understand her encrypted message relayed through Smith at the very end, "Everything that has a beginning must also have an ending."

That is why Neo did not resist, he just looked down and peacefully accepted the transformation, trusting that what was happening was meant to be.

The very word Oracle implies the ability to see the future. The Oracle knew for CENTURIES what would take place and patiently waited for it to all come together. The previous versions of Neo made the wrong choice and cooperated in rebuilding Zion allowing Trinity to die. The oracle knew that after several cycles of this that Neo would evolve and finally end the war. She cooperated with the Architect convincing him that she was on his side, when in reality she never really was.

During episode 1 she told Neo that he needed to make a choice to save himself or Morpheus, and that one of them would die. That did not happen until episode 3. He did have to make that choice and he spent a great while thinking over that choice before he

came forward to the council of captains and asked for one of the ships. He knew he would die if he made that choice. He knew that he would save Morpheus. Thanks for letting me share these insights into this saga.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/2/2008 4:40:46 PM
David,

Glad you liked my take on things.

Your insights into the saga seem to make sense. And from the point of view of the Trilogy, it works. But if you accept my story as an extension of the Trilogy, then Neo doesn't die. In fact, in my story (if you want to carry the Christian parallel onward) Neo is almost like a Christ figure in that he doesn't really ever die. He has been resurrected yet again, and would be indefinitely. Essentially, he exists in all realities, all at the same time.

But there are endless ways to view these stories; it's kind of what I like about them so much.

Thanks for your thoughts.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Corry DATE: 5/3/2008 10:28:46 PM
Just came across your site whilst browsing the web for info on a potential Matrix 4 movie.

I started reading your screenplay and that was it, I was instantly hooked. I read through it all in about an hour and a half.

Mr Wood, congratulations your screenplay is absolutely fantastic, and deserves to be made into the next Matrix Film. After reading your screenplay, I can't see any better way of continuing it, nothing could top this.

As I got half way through, I was expecting to be let down, patiently waiting to pounce on on any flaw I could find, but I didn't happen. I was simply blown away to the end.

What impressed me most is how faithfully you managed to keep the character verbals, to the original films. I could actually visualize how Keanu and the cast would actually fit into each scene, and the new characters / androids you added were awesome.

Additionally, your plot and storyline are masterpieces, I can't believe how clever it all is, and how it eventually all connects together at the right moments like a jigsaw!!!

Even if there's never going to be another Matrix movie made, reading this has quenched my thirst, but boy would this be amazing if it was made.

All I can say is:

"Wachowsk Bro's please, please read this screenplay, and then make the Matrix 4!!!"

Also just wanted say that I wouldn't count out the possibility that The Wachowski brothers might actually read your screenplay from this site; After all they did make characters in the Matrix Online Game when it was released. I bet out of curiosity they'll google Matrix 4 to see what the communities up to, find your site, and read your screenplay.

If not, then its up to you to find a way of getting it seen by them, but if a random bloke can meet Drew Barrymore (My Date With Drew) and make a movie out of it, then you can do this!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Corry DATE: 5/3/2008 10:46:51 PM

Also just wanted say that I wouldn't count out the possibility that The Wachowski brothers might actually read your screenplay from this site; After all they did make characters in the Matrix Online Game when it was released. I bet out of curiosity they'll google Matrix 4 to see what the communities up to, find your site, and read your screenplay.

If not, then its up to you to find a way of getting it seen by them, but if a random bloke can meet Drew Barrymore (My Date With Drew) and make a movie out of it, then you can do this!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/3/2008 11:38:53 PM

Corry,

Alright! That's what I like to hear. That's the enthusiasm I'm looking for.

You just happened to read the most recent revision which addressed some flaws; it's nice to know that I corrected them in a seamless manner (at least in your opinion).

Keeping each person in character was a major priority; I knew people would pounce on that immediately if it wasn't handled well. Also nice to hear that I was successful there, too.

And, yeah, the androids were a tasty addition. I really enjoyed bringing them to life.

I'm doing all I can to try and get this thing in front of the people that can make it into a movie. Obviously, the Wachowski brothers would have to like it. That's a tall order, though; hard to know how they'll react to someone else extending THEIR story. But who knows. Maybe they'll be totally flattered and excited. We'll see.

I'm kind of hoping that when the Wachowski brother's next movie (Speed Racer) comes

out, more interest will be sparked around the Matrix. Then, perhaps, this screenplay will be in the right place at the right time. Let's hope.

Thanks for those superbly ego-inflating comments. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: JWOT DATE: 5/14/2008 7:01:38 AM

This was very a very good read like many have said, and just like many i have a few concerns.

I understand the mystery behind the matrix and its concept of infiniteness, but we eventually we need to acquire some form of resolution, and the random ex girlfriend who comes out of no where with a son is very complicating and we all love the twists in the matrix, but we're not in the mood for the same ending of superman returns where its his son that inherits his power.

In addition the Matrix chose him (Neo) in a sense. We can't give glory to 2 random who we never see in the other films and this one mentions them in such a minor fashion that its not very believable and very disapoiting (not that the twist is bad, but we've come so far in this story that it need a resolution and not a continuing resolution)

We also need to stop Smith. YOU HAVE SOMETHING NEAR THE END WITH HIM! WORK ON IT! YOUR SO FREAKING CLOSE!

Also even though i like that it doenst focus directly on Neo we still need to see him fight at least 2x in this movie. Sorry but thats the style of these films and even though the story is compelling you gotta admit the reason we fell in love with the matrix was when he dodged the bullets like an agent for the first time!

But i cant stress enough to say how good this script is, and am only being critical because I'm an actor and a fan, and it seems as though Reeves is only a good actor in this series. Your also so close to resolving the story finally. You have set everything up so WELL that your need the final pieces to some it all up!

I have ideas floating so i just might email you a few things that might help.

Peace

JWOT

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/14/2008 11:48:03 PM

JWOT,

Thanks for the awesome praise and critique.

I laughed when you brought up the "we all love the twists in the Matrix, but we're not in the mood for the same ending of superman returns where its his son that inherits his power". I definitely understand that response. The ending has always been a little

questionable for me. too. I guess I don't really know how I'd react if I was watching the movie and it ended that way. I feel like I could have both reactions. (1) Damn! I hate when they leave it hanging like that. It really kinda spoils it. (2) Yeah! I love that it isn't just another Hollywood ending. Kinda like real life, you really don't know how it's going to end.

But you just think if I left the final scene out, it would be better?

I didn't really understand this part, "We can't give glory to 2 random who we never see in the other films". Did you mean the Random Neos (pg 96) he runs into in his dream? If, so, I guess you're right. This scene may be stretching the boundaries of infinite realities too far; maybe it's biting off more than the movie needs to chew. Was that your point? And, if so, was it disappointing because you think it tried to take the movie into a whole new direction, when (in your opinion) it should have been narrowing down and resolving?

And you think Smith needs to be finished off again? Don't you think that would be a little quick, considering he was already finished off not long ago in Revolutions? People might find it hard to swallow. No?

And one of the main points of my story was to show that the Matrix, Zion, the Super Matrix, the real world, everything is continuous. Maybe that's not what most people want in the ending of the Matrix movie series, but it is kind of integral to my story. That's why it goes in many directions and opens up many possibilities.

But I guess if finality and resolution is what it would take to get this screenplay made into a movie, I'd do it, even though it's not what I had in mind. I guess you're probably right; an open-ended Matrix 4 would leave a bad taste in a enough people's mouths (and probably wouldn't sit well with the Hollywood executives).

Fight scenes. My story does have a fair number (enough?) of fights and battles, wouldn't you agree?

But, yes, yes...Neo fight scenes. More Neo fight scenes. It's true, people want those fight scenes. I did work in the one Neo battle scene (with the Smiths, pg 10) into the opening where Neo is in his unconscious state between worlds. And then I tried to make the dream scene (pg 96) with the random Neos be a Neo battle scene, but it wasn't working too well. Maybe I could try again with that.

I don't really think I can have him battling in the new world he's just awakened into (unless its in one of his dreams or unconscious states, as I've already done). There's no real reason for him to fight in his new world in my opinion. The other option would be to have him go back into the Matrix (Super Matrix) and fight there, but I think that would get too complicated. Don't you think?

"But i cant stress enough to say how good this script is". That's a great compliment, especially coming from an actor. Thank you. I'm glad you think it's that good.

For me there is some resolution to the story; Neo finds peace of mind and a truth he can live with. It's not complete resolution but I think people miss that aspect a bit.

But overall, your comments seem to talk about complete resolution. Get rid of new peripheral characters that take the story into vastly new territories such as the Random Neos, Rachael (the girlfriend) and the young Neo. And Smith has ultimately got to be destroyed or made powerless. If I followed through on these, you think it would pull it all together?

"I have ideas floating so i just might email you a few things that might help." What'd ya got? I'm all ears.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jordan DATE: 5/28/2008 4:40:05 AM

Great job on the script, I think it has a lot of potential to be made into a movie, the problem that I have with the end is Neo jr. is 6 years old and if smith is taking over everything I dont think he is going to sit around and wait for Neo jr. to grow up I think based on your ending smith is taking over everything as fast as possible.

I think its a good story and I think you should send it to the W. brothers but I think if they are going to make another one then they are going to do it themselves and they might already have an idea with what is going to happen with the matrix, I hope this helped you and please E-mail me with updates and to tell me if you submitted it to them and even if you have a small chance to get this script turned into a movie, just remember a small chance is better then no chance so good luck to you and keep me updated, please.....Thank you

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/28/2008 10:14:17 PM

Jordan,

Smith has inflicted heavy damage, but I figure the machines retaliate against Smith and balance out the battle very quickly. Smith continues to make small gains but only over a long period of time. By then Neo jr comes into the picture and confronts Smith. That's one possibility. Or maybe Smith eventually triumphs, the Matrix collapses, and Neo jr is destroyed with it. The possibilities are many. But the overall flavor I was trying to leave was that it's not over yet. How it plays out is left to the imagination.

I've been told by all who seem to know about the Hollywood script business, that cold calls and query letters to Warner Brothers, agents, the Wachowskis are all wasted time. The only way to get inside is to have Page 42 of 279 94207_86967_1â€“2â€“2012 1/2/12 4:57 PM someone already on the inside refer the work. So...if you know anybody, let me know. In the mean time I'll keep plugging away.

Thanks for reading it and I'm glad it made your list of great scripts. If you want updates, you can subscribe to this blog at the top of the main page. That's the easy way.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Red X DATE: 5/29/2008 7:45:43 PM

wow, that story was great... im going to leave this short and brief. If they do produce this one, it will make an opening for another for 2 more sequels. There seems not to be that more action in this version; i just fear it may revert to the same boring outcome as the Matrix Reloaded. However, its more like The Matrix ReBootod (no i am not pitching out suggestion for titles. Thought the plot is great; explains everything, leaving no gaps (sort of like the Matrix trilogies) and is enjoyable. Im still a found to the Action Pack Factor. I feel your sort of doing the 'Jumper' aspect but backwards. Instead of showing allot of special effects and leaving a shit loads of gaps for plot, you on the other hand leave nothing to question, but little action! If you do keep it as is, you better make those fight scene MASSIVE!!!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/29/2008 10:36:43 PM

Red X,

Action is the key word. From the beginning I knew there had to be enough action. Unfortunately, I feel like my story comes up a bit short in that department. I'd like to add more, but not at the expense of the plot. There are a few scenes that could be shortened to make room for more action parts, but, in my opinion, they can't be unjustified new action parts; they have to fit in well. The other option is to extend the existing action scenes. And, yes, those action scene have to be MASSIVE!!! I guess that's partly up to the director.

I was sort of relying on the intensity of the revelations and surprises to help give the movie enough of a jolt factor so that action wasn't the only thing propelling it along. But, again, I'd love more action, too. If the Brothers ever take an interest in my story, I'm sure I'll be able to add more action to boost it up.

Thanks for the kind words. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: MatrixFanboy DATE: 6/6/2008 7:38:54 PM

I never really got into fan fiction and now I know why. The first few pages really grabbed my attention, but once I hit page 30 I couldn't take it any more. Come on! Are you serious?! The one thing that almost every idiot out there thought was the truth behind the Matrix story right after Matrix Reloaded hit the theaters (which made absolutely no sense at all) is exactly how this "screenplay" continues the series. I'm sorry, but this is weak. Don't quit your day job PJ.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/6/2008 8:03:05 PM
PJ,

I agree; the basic premise of there being another layer beyond the Matrix is fairly predictable.

But I don't think that's the most interesting part of the story. You stopped right at the part where the revelation of another reality takes place between the Architect and Neo. But there's a lot more to come that I think is what makes the story so compelling. I suggest you at least read to the end and let me know if the rest of the story pulls you in. If not, I'll take any further criticisms or comments you have.

BTW, I'm no where near quitting my day job.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: rob DATE: 6/15/2008 4:03:16 AM
PD Wood,

Have you tried www.moviepitch.com . That site was started by the producer or director of the 12 monkeys. Maybe have him pitch the movie. He has done a lot of movie pitches that is why he started movie pitch dot com. I saw the site and thought about pitching some movie ideas. Give it a shot.

The 12 monkeys was a cool movie. Bruce Willis is always cool.

Matrix 4 would be really cool. Good luck.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/15/2008 1:55:49 PM
Rob,

No, I haven't tried it. But it sounds like a great idea. I'm looking into it. Thanks, PD Wood

Addition: As I expected, only material that is completely original can be submitted. This also goes for screenplay competitions and the like. It's unfortunate, but that's the way the cookie burns. I've tried submitting under these circumstances, but the work just gets rejected or removed. But I sure appreciate the heads up. Thanks again.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Sam DATE: 6/18/2008 9:14:35 PM
What an incredible journey to the end! It was almost a relief there was another Neo out there.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/18/2008 9:42:46 PM
Sam,

Glad you enjoyed it. Long live Neo!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Errol DATE: 6/24/2008 6:53:26 AM

Hey, totally loved the script! It did an excellent job of explaining things that disappointed me about the trilogy especially how Neo had powers in the "real" world, the oracle and so much more.

However I really didn't like the ending. At first I thought I didn't get the full download, then I must have reread it at least 10 times trying to figure out what you were trying to get at. Since you are looking for comments directly related to the ending here are some.

1) Who is Rachel? I can't remember her. I can't find her in any of the IMDB entries. I'm sure the Matrix fans that can tell you what Neo was wearing in a particular scene are laughing at me, but after all these years it's possible anyone who would view your movie won't remember who Rachel is either.

2) Why is remembering Rachel is important? If the story ended with Trinity taking Neo to the viewing room and seeing Rachel with the young Neo, we'd all say "Ah, Rachel and Neo had sex and produced a child she decided to name Neo who will save the SuperMatrix like Neo", but because you've taken us through the looking glass into the multiverse, we don't know what just happened.

I can't remember anything about Rachel and wouldn't assume he had sex with her just because Trinity said she was his girlfriend. So when I read the scene, I'm thinking that the young Neo is actually Keanu Neo and he forgot that Rachel was his mother when he grew up and she didn't want to tell him especially if this young Neo looks like Keanu Neo, which is what I pictured him to look like. The timeline is blurred and I think you are doing too much by trying to tie in the nonexistent viewing room scene with your views on infinite worlds.

I think it's important that Matrix 4 have enough backstory that it can be watched on it's own without having to remember every detail of the older movies *especially* when you are at the end where movies can be made or broken. I want to walk away feeling satisfied and not saying "WTF?"

3) I really didn't like the Neo shaving scene where he bends down and Neo is still there. I assuming you're trying to say that the "real world" is just another matrix. Ok that's cool. I like that, but in all the Matrix movies we've seen, where was it that a reflection wasn't a reflection but actually a portal to some other matrix where your counterpart is just standing there all day copying your moves.

I know what you are trying to say that "OMG, the real world is also a matrix" but it comes across as cheesy and not consistent with the high quality of the rest of the script. Why cheesy? Does that Neo in that other world just shave his face for all the other Matrices and how is he able to mimic every single move so perfectly as to appear as a reflection? It just doesn't make any sense at all.

There is a 3000 chars limit so I'll continue in another post. :)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Errol DATE: 6/24/2008 6:55:01 AM
Continued...

4) The shower door opening on it's own and us zooming into it again just seems to take too large of an artistic licence. Also if you are trying to show us that there are infinite realities, why would you take us to what I assume is the SuperMatrix that Trinity was going to show Neo anyway? In other words, why not just do the more straightforward scene of Trinity walking Neo to the viewing room and having a scene with Neo saying "Is that my son?" or something more clear. I could understand if you wanted to take us to another reality where Neo is a girl or a monster or who knows what but I think you can do a much better job of showing us that the "real world" is really just another Matrix.

It should be mind blowing and something we couldn't have anticipated. Maybe have Trinity walk Neo to the viewing room and they talk about his son and the camera zooms out and turns into a monitor where they are beign watched, which zooms out further into more Page 45 of 279 94207_86967_1â€“2â€“2012 1/2/12 4:57 PM monitors but with different realities and zooms out more into thousands of monitors etc..

I *really really like* what you are saying that it doesn't matter if the world is real or not but what you make of it. However I think you need to be careful not make it cheesy or strange that it doesn't make sense. It's definitely a tall order and right now the ending is really bad I'm sorry to say but apart from that the rest of the script would make a great movie hands down! One general comment is that there are a few typos where you used "quite" instead of "quiet" and a couple more like that. Sorry for not taking notes on where they were but I wasn't expecting to contact you.

Anyway hope that helps as I'd really love to see this become a movie.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jessi DATE: 6/24/2008 8:10:58 PM
i truly love all three of the matrix movies because i think the characters were so superb. and i was curious to see how this would turn out considering it was not written by the brothers. and as i read it i found myself confused considering the characters are all wrong. They have lost their strength as individual characters in this screenplay. i didn't get to the end to give my comment on what you say is causing controversy but if i do i will post another comment. i just feel that the characters need to be worked again because i am just not getting that same feel from the original trilogy.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/24/2008 10:39:54 PM
Jessi,

Thanks for reading the screenplay and letting me know what you think.

I read your comment, "the characters are all wrong. They have lost their strength as

individual characters in this screenplay." I'm not sure I understand exactly what you mean; could you be more specific? Which ones? Morpheus, Neo, Trinity, the Architect, the Merovingian, others?

I actually thought I gave certain characters more depth and dimension. Let me know what you think? PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/24/2008 11:10:43 PM
Errol,

Quote << Who is Rachel? I can't remember her.>>

I can see the confusion. I guess I didn't let Rachel make a long enough appearance or a strong enough impact in my screenplay for some people. The issue of not knowing who Rachel is has come up before. This tends to happen because some people read the script in many sittings instead of in one sitting (the way a movie would be seen). If you go to page 11 and 12 of the screenplay you'll see the scene with Rachel. It is short but (I thought at least) memorable enough to stay with a movie viewer until the last scene. Check out the Rachel scene and tell me if it makes more sense in that context.

Quote << I really didn't like the Neo shaving scene where he bends down and Neo is still there. I assuming you're trying to say that the "real world" is just another matrix. Ok that's cool. I like that, but in all the Matrix movies we've seen, where was it that a reflection wasn't a reflection but actually a portal to some other matrix where your counterpart is just standing there all day copying your moves.

I know what you are trying to say that "OMG, the real world is also a matrix" but it comes across as cheesy and not consistent with the high quality of the rest of the script. Why cheesy? Does that Neo in that other world just shave his face for all the other Matrices and how is he able to mimic every single move so perfectly as to appear as a reflection? It just doesn't make any sense at all.>>

Yeah, point taken. I suppose it is a bit cheesy. That scene may have to be reworked or deleted; not sure yet. What I was trying to get at was, for a split second, another Neo from another world gets a fleeting glimpse of this world; and it's only during that split second that the reflection is anything other than a reflection. Guess it didn't work that way for you.

Quote <<The shower door opening on it's own and us zooming into it again just seems to take too large of an artistic licence. Also if you are trying to show us that there are infinite realities, why would you take us to what I assume is the SuperMatrix that Trinity was going to show Neo anyway? In other words, why not just do the more straightforward scene of Trinity walking Neo to the viewing room and having a scene with Neo saying "Is that my son?" or something more clear. I could understand if you wanted to take us to another reality where Neo is a girl or a monster or who knows what but I think you can do a much better job of showing us that the "real world" is really just another Matrix.

It should be mind blowing and something we couldn't have anticipated. Maybe have Trinity walk Neo to the viewing room and they talk about his son and the camera zooms out and turns into a monitor where they are being watched, which zooms out further into more monitors but with different realities and zooms out more into thousands of monitors etc..>>

Yet again, point taken. I like your idea of zooming out monitor after monitor to show the layered realities. Nice. It also reinforces the three times I used that technique earlier in the story.

You've hit on some difficulties in the story and also some nice ways to address them. If the movie world ever takes an interest in this story, I'll definitely consider some of the ideas you've suggested. But, for now, I'm going to continue working on my own ORIGINAL screenplay. Hopefully that will catapult me into the Hollywood world even if the Super Matrix doesn't.

Your comments were very helpful and I'm glad you enjoyed most of the story; sorry the ending was such a disappointment. (If there's one thing that irks me to no end, it's a great story with a bad ending. So, again, my apologies!)

P.S. I think I got most of the typos within the past month (including the one you mentioned), and uploaded a fresher copy of the script to my site. If you downloaded it recently and those typos were still present, let me know. Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Kory DATE: 6/30/2008 5:47:09 PM

I read some of the other comments and you said something about Morpheus thinking Neo and Trinity are dead, are they? I'm not sure because I'm not allowed to download anything so let me know... ASAP!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/30/2008 7:09:43 PM

Kory,

Neo and Trinity are dead as far as the people in Zion and the Matrix are concerned. But they live on in a further layer of reality that exists outside of Zion and the Matrix. I hope you find a way to download it; it's a chewy read. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Anonymous DATE: 7/7/2008 2:46:04 AM

While I enjoy the script and the idea of the next movie itself, I feel that you should have taken more consideration to the mannerisms of the characters as individuals. The script isn't believable because the mannerisms are not becoming of the characters that the public has been acquainted with for the past 9 years. My suggestion would be to watch the movies and study, not only Neo, but the rest of the characters as well (i.e. Naïbi, Jason, the Merovingian). I only read the first 5 pages and it's already unrealistic, because of the dialogue and personality that you've assigned to the characters. I really do want your script to work. I really do want a fourth Matrix movie, however, if you're going to

pitch this to producers, you're going to need your characters to fit. You're adding onto the original story, not rewriting it. Revise it a bit. I'll be checking! I wish for great success to you. And remember, don't disappoint the public. Already alot of us are counting on you, and you're not even published yet!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/7/2008 3:39:05 AM

I appreciate you taking the time to leave some feedback; I'm always very open and interested in what people have to say.

Considering most of the comments I've gotten indicate that I've done a good job with the characters and their mannerisms, I'm wondering why you think to the contrary. I have watched the movies many, many times, read the original scripts, and scoured forums for all kinds for advice and direction. I feel as though I've done my homework pretty well. Perhaps you could be more specific (i.e. specific dialogue or descriptions) as to why you think the characters don't work.

I also suggest you read more than just the first 5 pages. Lots happens in the remaining 115 pages and some of the characters may make more sense to you as the story progresses.

I hope you give it a full read; I'm much more open to comments when the script has been fully absorbed. Besides, I think you'll like where the story goes (even if some of the characters are inconsistent).

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Hurricane Floyd DATE: 7/7/2008 9:19:33 PM

A nice piece of fan-fiction, however it has several inconsistencies which make it not quite right as a true sequel.

One of these is the fact that you overlooked some of the variances in how the backstory and the ending are perceived in the original movies, in other words "Supermatrix" is written from your perception of the movies and does not leave room for including alternate views.

In the world of The Matrix stories you can in essence bring up an infinite number of levels, matrix inside of matrix inside of matrix to infinity, although a mind blowing concept it is far to vast to put into understandable literature/film.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/7/2008 10:05:18 PM

Hurricane Floyd,

Thanks for the nod and the feedback.

When you say, " you overlooked some of the variances in how the back story and the

ending are perceived in the original movies", I'm guessing for the back story you're referring to the human archives as they are detailed in the Animatrix shorts and the ending as it continues in the Matrixonline? Or perhaps something else?

If you have more specifics, it would be much more helpful. Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ryan Hoskins DATE: 7/16/2008 6:35:06 AM

WOW.... absolutely blown away.... PD Wood you are a genius there is no other way the matrix franchise could come up with a possible Matrix 4 and top you.... Being a fan of the series I believe with everything in me that this story line if you keep the same actors and not change anybody other than the oracle it would go great with the series.... What I mean by changing the oracle is simply I love the original oracle better than the woman who played in the last matrix addition... But as far as what they need to do with making another Matrix addition omg this is simply amazing.... Other than the oracle the only other thing that I could see is maybe neo and trinity need to have one more fight scene but other than those two suggestions this is absolutely amazing... Thank you for your Vision...

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Chris DATE: 7/16/2008 1:57:00 PM

Hello,
So far the script is great. I just found 1 typo on page 75.
President
"We been through a lot, you and I"
should read
"We've been through a lot, you and I"

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/16/2008 8:47:03 PM

Ryan,

I'm glad you think it's that good; hopefully, Warner Brothers will think so, too, and make a forth (before the actors start to age too, too much). If it ever gets picked up, I'm guessing the powers that be will want more fight scenes, too. If and when that happens, I'll add more.

By the way the reason the actress for the Oracle changed is because the original actress died between movies. And I agree, the original Oracle was more animated and likable somehow.

Well, thanks again. Words like "genius" and "vision" in reader comments always make

my day. See you in the movies (I hope!) PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/16/2008 9:00:58 PM
Chris,

Glad you're liking it. Let me know what you think when you finish.

There have been a few typos that people have picked up on. This one, however, is supposed to be that way. The President is a hard hitting, Texas-type with a colloquial drawl and a penchant for dropping certain words or contraction endings, "Know what I mean?". "Bet you do". "Not sure whether he comes across that way." "What you think?".

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Aiden DATE: 7/17/2008 1:50:47 AM
I have read this in one sitting,

This was actually near perfection for me. I very much welcome change in the entertainment field and to be one hundred percent honest... I cannot see how any director would turn down this amazing potential. A few minor changes or swaps to tweak the interest for the less intense viewer of course, but nothing that can't be handled on set!

This has more than satisfied my need for that mind-blowing nature the other three delivered. People may worry about a fourth installment but if it is done like this, then you are looking at possibly doubling interest for the Matrix movie series. I can only hope something of such quality gets the attention it deserves.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/18/2008 2:28:01 AM
Aiden,

I can't tell you how much I appreciate your kind and flattering review. Right now I'm in the midst of trying to write a completely original script of my own and it's been a bit maddening recently. But when comments like yours arrive, I get all juiced up and back on track. Perfect timing!

Let's hope that if the Warner or Wachowski brothers ever come a knock, it's with a smiling contract and not a frowning lawsuit!

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: derek DATE: 7/21/2008 4:06:37 AM
they should definitely make a matrix 4... just not yours. it is so unbelievable and just wrong. now i didnt read it all, but from what i did read, here are my problems with it. the dialog is bad, the smith dragon is completely different from anything in the movies,

introducing a new matrix, is too much of a reach. you are introducing too much at once, and frankly, its boring. just adding on another matrix is a horrible way to continue on the story. THEN the fact that you made everyone family.... well... i mean, COME ONNNN! that just doesnt cut it. i understand that i dont know the story, or the explanations, but just the jist of it gives me a bad vibe. everything just seems too separate from the other films. and confusing. if this were to be made, it would be the equivalent or worse to spiderman 3.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/22/2008 1:52:23 AM
derek,

I can see some of your points but I'm also surprised that you think it falls short on so many levels.

My story definitely separates itself from the world and lives of the people in Zion (to which most Matrix lovers had a strong attachment). That might be the single most difficult part of the story for Matrix lovers to accept. But on the other hand the whole concept of the Matrix story was about worlds within worlds, about breaking through and seeing the truth. This story kind of circles back to the first Matrix where Neo makes his mind-blowing discovery that the world he's known all along is not the only world. I thought that was a nice loop back to the original mind-blower.

And the idea that the whole Super Matrix world was designed, engineered and operated by small groups of hand-picked, ultra-intelligent military families, it's definitely a giant leap, a staggering reality. But, still...I thought that was a stroke of brilliance, an idea that would appeal to the Matrix lover's sense of depth and interconnection. I'm sorry it didn't work for you.

On the other points I concede. The dialog needs work. And, yes, the Smith dragon is a wild element, maybe a bit too wild. It's been a stretch for numerous people. And there is a lot going on; it can be confusing at times. The continuity needs work.

Since you'd obviously love to see a 4th Matrix, it disappoints me to see that my version leaves you cold. You're just the audience I'm most trying to appeal to and would love to please. I wish I could have come up with something more enjoyable for you. I know it would probably be hard for you to finish the story at this point, but you never know...the rest of it might redeem the part you've already read...at least a little.

I appreciate you taking the time to read and comment on it even though you didn't like it. From my point of view the critical dissection will only help make my next project better.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: naterob DATE: 7/22/2008 3:47:51 AM

This was absolutely great. Good luck, with getting it to the movie screen I can't wait to see it. Matrix 3 ended with a lot of questions. I think you have made a great attempt to answer them.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/22/2008 9:48:57 AM

naterob,

So glad you liked it. The movie version is probably a pipe dream, but then, you never can tell. Let's hope.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: crashxzibit DATE: 7/24/2008 5:03:19 AM

I dont know, it's an awesome idea, but one that should be really well thought out. There needs to be something that will grab people's attention and make them believe about it. These movies carried such philosophical meaning with them that a fourth would need to be one that carried that on in a very careful manner.

If you're going to continue the characters from the originals please make them similar like for example Morpheus, he should talk with much more meaning and intelligence if you remember in all the matrixes he spoke with philosophical meaning.

I really couldnt read all of it, sorry for being a bad critic but it really didnt grasp me and make me want to believe. You knew when watching the matrix after the first scene, it was something different and meaningful. And if youre really going to try and hit Hollywood up, especially with another matrix movie, it should be something really breathe taking. Think about it, the originals were such a big big hit and they really touched people all over the world. So to try and keep the flow going would require something that surpasses all the matrixes or else its not even worth the embarrassment. Come on this is Hollywood man!! They are not just going to throw their money and anything.

But I did say that I dont know, I could be totally wrong, I could be talking out my ass. Or I could be ignorant living the bliss full life of all the other copper tops in the matrix. Or I could not even be real and just another form of control trying to keep people from realizing the truth. The truth that there really is neither reality nor matrix and we are formulating this so called life of ours in our own minds. So, I really cant pass judgment or criticism because the feelings that you will receive from reading this will just be electrical signals interpreted by your mind. In a sense you will never know if they are real or a reality pulled over your eyes to keep you under control, to turn you into a Duracell battery for the machines. That is the question, which is what drives us??

COMMENT: AUTHOR: JILoubser DATE: 7/24/2008 2:26:02 PM

I think before they make the matrix 4 story after matrix 3: they must make the Matrix Begins (must be the same story as Animatrix, but realistic and more action and suspense - just think about the war scenes and born of the AI , Neo can play a prophetic scene. This will make allot of money.) The fourth Matrix must have a twist like example there were Bad AI and Good AI, the Good AI want to destroy the Bad AI so they need Humans thus Neo are resurrected; this must contain allot of action and suspense, for humans are just start to restart their lives, now they are caught in one big mess and war (Neo to the rescue). Agent Smith must survive for there must be a copy in the Train World where Neo ones was. There must be a war between Merovingian French guy and Machine World. The skateboard guy (commit suicide) that Neo rescued in Animatrix that played a small role in Matrix 3 must play a big role in Matrix 4, for he is the one that rescue Neo from his coma: this coma consist of a fantasy dream state in the machine world. He must rescue Neo and we can build a love story with skateboard guy in the real world. There is allot i can tell you guys and share, but i think it is up to the Directors, i wish i could help directing " I have allot of ideas and solutions to the critics. What I can help with the critics is that more of the Matrix world must be involved in both Matrix Begins and Matrix Resurrection" more action and suspense scenes involved inside the Matrix like Matrix 1 Telephone scenes. Good Luck.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/24/2008 8:13:12 PM
crashxzibit,

I thought I was successful at many of the points you made. The idea of another superimposed Matrix, the control of humans over machines, the notion of rebel android 36s trying to free the machines, the familial connection of the Architect, Trinity, Persephone and the Merovingian - all these were very carefully thought out and in my opinion pretty breath-taking or at least intriguing. The story may not have gone in a direction that most people would anticipate, but to say that you think it's not well thought-out or intriguing is a surprise to me.

My story is meant to break away from the Trilogy to a certain extent; for me this helps keep the Trilogy concept intact. You say Morpheus has lost some of his intellectual and philosophical force in my story. Yes, that's true and deliberate; I felt that much of what drove him his whole life was his search for and teaching of the One and the fulfillment of the prophecy. Once the prophecy was fulfilled and the One gone, much of Morpheus' purpose went with it. Doesn't that seem plausible?

Anyway, thanks for the comments. I hope you can see my point even if you don't totally agree with them.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/24/2008 9:20:18 PM
JLoubser,

I don't know if you read my story, but it does much of what you suggest; it's about the Matrix beginning, it has twists, it has some excellent action and suspense scenes, Agent Smith does survive, and in a way there is a personal battle between the Merovingian and the machines. The skateboard guy is the only one who doesn't figure prominently from your suggestions. I highly recommend you read it as it seems to conform very closely to what you think a good Matrix 4 would be.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: JJBoubser DATE: 7/25/2008 8:47:42 AM

All the previous characters must remain like Morpheus with the story I told, that is what I mend. I like critics it makes the story better.

Yes, the Philosophy & wisdom teachings must remain and new ones added. I had Philosophy on University thus understand the concepts well in the Matrix. The 'matrix begins' must contains allot of mind playing via Animatrix. Ask the question: "will there ever be hope for humans when they sin? AI wars are the fruits we reap" I think Matrix can give a message to non-believers and sinners (a guy that just think about himself and his pleasure and not the pleasures of others the only way to be selflessness is to sacrifice. No one is without sin and no one deserve life, thus innocent Jesus came to Earth, because he is selflessness and wants us to have life. He is the only religion that has unconditional love for his brothers. The other religions contain mercy for good deeds or no mercy at all) I saw a Muslim guy that repent to Christianity, most Christians are hypocrites and that gave the true Christians a bad name. Christian wars are actually spiritual, but you a can find the symbolic message in the Matrix. I need to write an essay how I view the Matrix. But I think Matrix belongs to non-Christians or Atheists thus it complicated the situation, but I believe Jesus will destroy all his enemies in the future, thus the story of the Matrix will belong to Christians. Read the bible in Revelation in thee End New Heaven and Earth. If I can I will make Matrix begins and Matrix 4 in heaven that is up to Jesus.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: JJBoubser DATE: 7/25/2008 8:51:05 AM

All the previous characters must remain like Morpheus with the story I told, that is what I mend. The first 3 Matrix was very good - The next ones just forfill the story with more twists and action. I like critics it makes the story better.

Yes, the Philosophy & wisdom teachings must remain and new ones added. I had Philosophy on University thus understand the concepts well in the Matrix. The 'matrix begins' must contains allot of mind playing via Animatrix. Ask the question: "will there ever be hope for humans when they sin? AI wars are the fruits we reap" I think Matrix can give a message to non-believers and sinners (a guy that just think about himself and his pleasure and not the pleasures of others the only way to be selflessness is to sacrifice. No one is without sin and no one deserve life, thus innocent Jesus came to Earth, because he is selflessness and wants us to have life. He is the only religion that has unconditional love for his brothers. The other religions contain mercy for good deeds or no mercy at all) I saw a Muslim guy that repent to Christianity, most Christians

are hypocrites and that gave the true Christians a bad name. Christian wars are actually spiritual, but you can find the symbolic message in the Matrix. I need to write an essay how I view the Matrix. But I think Matrix belongs to non-Christians or Atheists thus it complicated the situation, but I believe Jesus will destroy all his enemies in the future, thus the story of the Matrix will belong to Christians. Read the bible in Revelation in the End New Heaven and Earth. If I can I will make Matrix begins and Matrix 4 in heaven that is up to Jesus.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: JjLoubser DATE: 7/25/2008 9:39:22 AM

Cool, the first scenes you create is great, but they must be a mystery for the Audience, because Morpheus and Lock business is done in Matrix 3 " we do not want to repeat their problems. So your scenes exist, but in the mind of the characters. I think we must start where Morpheus teach students about the past history of Neo 's victory and a philosophy faith lesson. They then find the need to look for Neo, because no one knows if he is really dead. The AI machines are telling their own story to the humans, thus the skateboard guy (the only one that come close to the mind power of the one) go on a mission (look in Matrix; find the machine world; find girl; go back to matrix; find train world) finding Neo and fall in love with a girl long the way. Morpheus words remain in his head, while Morpheus had to rescue him at the end of his journey finding Neo. At the end he and Morpheus find Agent Smith in the train world, this fight leads to the Merovingian that tells them that Neo is alive and helping the AI machines to fight the Bad AI machines. The Merovingian still evil try to kill them, but Neo rescued them. The skateboard guy and Morpheus could fight Agent Smith, but not the Merovingian (he has powers of Agent Smith combining with his own and the oracle), thus Neo (super Neo) destroy Merovingian. Before this the Merovingian also killed the architect and took control over the matrix, but the Merovingian kept the Matrix system intact with the Agents, because he enjoy control, power and to kept things tidy. The fight scenes must be much more advanced matrix style. The skateboard guy brakes through the matrix system barriers to reach the machine world and train world.

In the end Neo take Morpheus and Skateboard guy to the bad AI matrix to rescue a man inside: The one of the bad AI Matrix. When they rescued him they destroy the architect of the bad AI matrix. They restore peace on Earth. The humans already start to create a big new city on Earth with the help of the machines. In the last scene the humans took away the black sky clouds and the machines resurrect Trinity (they store her soul in the machine world special place when she died) for Neo a big celebration. For the machines anything is possible, because of advance technology, but they need Neo (super mind), because humans do have something machines do not have (faith). If you want to make money we must create a story not predictable for the people, but I like your 3D graphics and style. We can use that combining new action style. I hope I help you destroy the critics. Do not forget about the 'Matrix Begins' (This can be a great movie)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: guttu DATE: 8/3/2008 6:06:29 AM

hi,

i think this movie is mad and should be released as soon as possible. the reason is that i want to see how Neo comes back in.

thanks.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/6/2008 1:59:35 AM
guttu,

I'm with you 100%.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Selina Enriquez DATE: 8/6/2008 5:05:02 AM
As a hardcore Matrix fan for over 9 years, I'd say:

Let's encourage the Wachowskis to make Matrix 4!

Bring Neo back!

Bring Smith back!

There is sooooo much plot information to begin with due to the Matrix Online game.
There is so many fan websites, fanfiction, blogs, fan films, etc.

Instead of crappy Scary Movie films.

Instead of crappy movie remakes, like King Kong.

Instead of Spiderman 4, Terminator 4, X-Files 2, X-Men...errr...8718262, etc, etc - let's
bring some REAL action.

Let's encourage the Wachowski Brothers to make Matrix 4!

Who's up for starting a petition?

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/6/2008 9:16:40 PM
Selina,

While I love your enthusiasm and wish a Matrix 4 we're in the future, I lean away from
starting a petition or putting any pressure on the Warner or Wachowski brothers.

While the plot of my screenplay is original, the characters and the supporting story are
not. I wrote The Super Matrix primarily as an exercise in screenwriting and as a fun way
to imagine the Trilogy progressing. I also wanted people to read and enjoy the story. But
that's as far as I'd like to take it.

If the Warner or Wachowski brothers catch wind of it and approach me, that would be
fine, but I really don't want to start a campaign. If they're really interested in a Matrix 4,
believe me, they'll make it. They already have a captive audience and there's obviously

huge money-making potential. So I think we should be thankful for what they've already created and just hope for a Matrix 4 in the future.

Respectfully, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: JILoubser DATE: 8/7/2008 8:03:26 AM

Yes

Do not worry they will or i will.

The Marix has them...

COMMENT: AUTHOR: JILoubser DATE: 8/7/2008 8:10:09 AM

Yes i just need some new philosophy wisdom words for Morpheus, Oracle and Merovingian also need to add new loving characters with some twist in the old characters. We need a extra powerfull bad guy as well with Merovingian.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ben the Believer DATE: 8/27/2008 4:23:41 PM

PD Wood,

For so long now, I have felt a void in my curiosity and fascination for the Matrix concept because of lack of explanation deriving from the first three Matrix installments. I felt there needed to be more.

For example, after viewing 'Matrix Reloaded' in the theater, I felt I had the explanation. I went home, and wrote down a short note to myself, explaining my own theory.

I had concluded that the Matrix was a secondary part of a sort of "Mainframe Matrix", called 'Zion', and that the Zionites were blinded by the fact that they were still part of a system of control; A Matrix inside of a Matrix.

this explains Neo's newfound power outside of the original Matrix.

Now, I'll be happy to say that your screenplay has filled a much needed void in where I thought the 3rd installment would lead, but ultimately did not.

I was disappointed, because I was wrong in my predication. It simply turns out that I was not alone. Thank you for that.

Now, I'll say that I believe your screenplay has more potential to reach the screen than any other Matrix continuation. Find a publisher, gain legal advice on retaining adaptive rights to the original material, and move forward. With material this good, you can't fail.

Thanks again.

-Ben the Believer

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/28/2008 12:45:04 AM

Ben the Believer,

I guess it's true, great minds do think alike. Or maybe restless minds just keep searching for answers.

I'm happy to hear that my story parallels your own ideas about the Matrix and that you think it's good enough to pursue with legal vigor. I guess up until you said it, I'd never really thought about trying to secure the adaptive rights to my story.

My intention has always been to write a solid continuation to the story for Matrix fans with the hope, of course, that the Warner or Wachowski brothers would catch wind of it and maybe pick it up. But perhaps I should be a little more proactive. Trying to secure the adaptive rights sounds like a great idea.

But even if I secure legal ownership of my story, I would still have to persuade the brothers to make the movie. They still retain ownership of the characters and franchise, which I don't see any way around. The biggest advantage I have is that my story is solid and convincing. I just wish I knew how to get it to their attention.

In the meantime I'll look into securing the adaptive rights, if that's possible at all. Your positive attitude and glowing praise only help to propel me in the direction of inevitability: namely, that a Matrix 4 is in the cards sometime in the future. Let's just hope it's my version.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ben the Believer DATE: 8/28/2008 2:14:29 PM

The Wachowski brothers don't have to make it, other directors would jump on this if the brothers decided not to pursue the 4th installment. (which would actually be the third, due to the fact that Matrix Revolutions was filmed as one movie, but ultimately split in half by Warner Bros.)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/28/2008 4:23:18 PM

Ben,

That may indeed be true, however, they still retain the copyright on the franchise. One way or another, the Wachowskis will have to give it their blessing. How best to get them to do that is the issue. Have you got the magic spell?

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: pingu DATE: 9/4/2008 4:47:36 AM

I really enjoyed it! I was always uncomfortable with the idea of neo having supernatural powers in the world of zion. One of the things I loved about the original matrix film was that the real world is just like our world, ie lacking in any supernatural phenomena, but of course in the matrix being a computer simulation neo can do anything he wanted. so with your idea that the world of zion is actually the supermatrix then it seems more

reasonable that neo can have supernatural powers in that world too. However, I was a bit discouraged in the end with the two different neo reflections in the bathroom. That really is supposed to be the real world so how could that happen? unless you're suggesting that this real world is yet another matrix, a super-super matrix. where would it end? I read it pretty quickly so sorry if I missed something and that it's a stupid question.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Brandon P. DATE: 9/4/2008 9:49:49 PM

First off, WOAHAH!!! I've only read the first half of it and... WOAHAH!!! One of the best works of art in the array of scripts I have read for a Matrix Continuation. If you were to take that to the Wachowskis, they would take it, shape it into a movie, and we fans well would have our next Matrix movie in the world!!! 6 out of 5 Stars!! (If you know what I mean.)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/4/2008 10:04:50 PM

pingu,

I'm glad you liked the story and that, for you, in some ways it gave the series more plausibility.

And, no, I'm definitely not suggesting that the real world is a super-super matrix concocted as just another a ruse to fool people or machines. I do like the idea that not every world is a virtual simulation.

I am, however, suggesting that there are other layers of existence, just not simulated ones! And also that Neo's special qualities were not unique to the Matrix and the Super Matrix, but are a part of who he is, wherever he is. And I suggest that he has the ability to tap into those other layers of existence, which might even be parallel worlds as is hinted at in his dream where he encounters many Neos.

That may seem to undermine the realness of the world of the Cortex and the good Architect and all, but I think it just expands the idea of the question, "What is real?" What Neo discovers and concludes in my story is that all worlds and existences are real. The trick is to accept the one you're in and live it fully.

Just more food for thought. Thanks for the feedback and I hope I quelled some of your discouragement.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/4/2008 10:16:43 PM

Brandon P.

Keep reading and let me know what you think of the second half. And I'm working on trying to get it to the Wachowskis; it's easier said than done.

I like 6 out of 5 stars! Thanks.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ugh DATE: 9/6/2008 8:09:54 PM

Characters' personalities differed an extreme amount from the trilogy. The interaction between was shaky at best. The plot was basically an inverse of the first matrix. Tell me, for the next part will you title it "The Super Duper Mega Matrix," where they all realize that their "reality" is just another computer generated illusion? Neo finds out that Smith is back and ready to terrorize everything he fought for in the trilogy and he doesn't even bat an eyelash. The Architect wasn't even close to his character, particularly in his dialogue. The only characters that were half-way comparable to their Wachowski brothers written counterparts were the Merovingian and Persephone. I seriously hope that you don't have any disillusionments that this will be made into a movie or even a paperback someday. I appreciate you taking the time to pen all of this. I'm sure it was a lot of work, but the idea of there being a "super matrix" is extremely unimaginative. You should stick to creating something yourself. I feel that you could write some sci-fi with some hard work and practice, but attempting to continue a classic trilogy such as The Matrix is a daunting task, and clearly a lofty goal. As I said, try to come up with something original and you may have some success. Best of luck.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/6/2008 9:19:41 PM

Ugh,

I appreciate you taking the time to give me constructive feedback despite its mostly negative bent. I could defend each part point for point, but that would just be my opinion against yours. Besides, much of what you brought up has been discussed in earlier comments. And I think some of your criticism has merit.

I'm definitely in agreement with you that it's time to work on something of my own, which I'm currently doing. The Super Matrix story was basically an exercise and fun challenge for me personally and one that I've wanted to share with other Matrix fans. Perhaps I've taken it too far in your eyes and tread in territory that's not my own. I hear that. But I've never done it out of disrespect to the Brothers; it's more of an homage from my perspective.

Despite your dislike of this particular extension of the Matrix Trilogy, I sense that you think I have talent. That I appreciate and hope to foster. Thanks for the honest critique and no hard feelings.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: JjLoubser DATE: 9/8/2008 7:12:13 AM

According to my calculations of Zion and the real world is not a super matrix, but just a another kind of control (real technology); the matrix is a dream world control; the real world is not a dream world; you guys must understand it; the reason why Neo could

perform supernatural in the real world is because he was made by the machines in the first place and that his brain could contain a machine chip that can work like a cell phone, a super network chip, combine with his abilities in the matrix give Neo the abilities in Matrix Revolution, where he could destroy real machines. The real world is a advance future technology based world, but Neo could use his brain power to communicate any place with any machine it was limited, in Matrix his powers was not limited. Neo was in the core of the Matrix with the Architect. The machine world also contains their own matrix the yellow code, Neo was there so he can communicate any place. It looks like you guys do not understand the Matrix Revolution, before you guys go to the Wachowskis just watch the Animatrix again and then Matrix Reload and Revolution. My story is still the closest to the truth of the Matrix philosophy. Read this Matrix1 focus on the Matrix and to rescue someone from it

Animatrix: Focus on the History, Philosophy and start of the Matrix and Zion

Matrix Reloaded: Focus on the Mystery of the Matrix (the programs)

Matrix Revolution: Focus on the Machine World, Machine World Matrix and the Real world.

***Matrix Begins: Same as Animatrix, but not Animated and story more complex and with drama and action.

***Matrix 4: Focus on the Machine World enemies other Machines. The good Machines need the help.

Neo could be dead or not. Trinity can be resurrected by the Machines. The Kid could help Morpheus and Neo to fight the enemies of the Machines. The enemy machines could also have a dark Matrix with bad characters. The Merovingian of the Matrix could get control by killing the Architect. A copy of Agent Smith could survive in the train world. Neo abilities could be doubled. The Kid could become like Neo, because his faith is very strong. Morpheus can defeat his first agent. There can be new philosophies and lessons added. There can be new machines in the real world with excellent battles. There could be new styles and fights in the Matrix. Come on guys lets kick ass.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Per DATE: 9/16/2008 2:27:38 AM

I just could not stop reading it grabed me and wouldn't let go until I was done reading and then I still wanted the story to keep going on. I love this story line that I could read for days without sleep. Great job keep updating I want more!!!!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/16/2008 2:38:56 AM

Per,

I'm glad you liked it so much...but I doubt I'll be adding to it. The rest is up to people's imagination at this point. Hope that isn't too disappointing.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: claudius iacob DATE: 9/17/2008 10:40:00 PM

Hey all,

First, I must admit, I haven't read the other comments. Shame on me.

However, I DID read the Script, it's now 1:11 AM, me finishing it.

I must admit that I did enjoyed it, to some point. Since we're all accustomed to split thinks in good and/or bad things, I'll start out by the good thinks, just to take them off the way.

- it's good to have Neo and Trinity "back", have them shower together, make love, lying on the beach and such.
- it's clever the whole idea of the Cortex, the over-imposed "Super-Matrix".
- ain't bad the idea of overthrowing machine's supremacy, and make them masters over virtual characters instead of real humans. Feel good, i mean :)
- may be appealing the flash backs, the mix in of androids (sic!) stories;
- sounds cool the idea of a politically united world, the President of the "Free" World, hm..., we don't fight each others, fight the machines instead, etc.
- Maybe a few others, sorry, I only have 3000 chars.

HOWEVER

- The whole story isn't feeling like one. There are way to many fronts where the story goes, like, the Source, the Super-Matrix (the world of the Machines, and the Zion, that is), the Matrix itself, plus, several other spots lost in time and history -- like, the attack of the machines, the androids planning an homicide, ETCETERA -- dude! do you ever stop to review what you've written so far?
- you don't ever finish anything, you merely have, let's say, the plot for each of your sections, but that's it.
- you're afraid to out your main characters at risk, which is why, the feeling that nothing ever's happening. The new Neo and Trinity seem to live an endless soap opera...
- there's too long a dreams (nightmares?) sequence in the beginning. When your action finally starts I could hardly believe this is /real/ -- not a dream, that is...
- you start the story of a Merovingian and Persephone, but get with them NOWHERE, like you get nowhere with the Smith(s) managing to get to the Matrix mainframe, with the Morpheus/Lock/others and the entire Zion counsel, etc...
- you merely seem to have focused of explaining things, but NO ACTION is ever being made, by nobody (OK, except the Smiths, but their actions lead to nowhere...)
- Why are the Merovingians parents of Trinity? What did you tried to demonstrate? 'Cause I can't follow from the script. Why is the 'Oracle' mother of Morpheus and Lock (they acted like brothers, but not in your script)? What's the point? IN SHORT: what purpose do all the those family links serve for? I mention soap opera again, where this is basic plot...
- I don't know dude, I've consumed 2500+ of my chars limit, and haven't said a tenth of what needs to be said...

Sorry guy, really do, you really need to get yourself together, you need discipline, you need to also focus on 'tension', 'unpredictable', and 'CONFLICT' -- 'cause you ain't got any --, and don't start more paths than you can follow, and *do* eventually converge all of them...

Sorry... Won't make its way to the screen.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/18/2008 1:38:49 AM
claudius iacob,

I'm going to have to agree with much of what you said, positive and negative.

You're right. The exposition is a bit much. It was hard to avoid that with a prequel/sequel. I don't love it.

You're right, I may have bitten off more than I can chew. The story tries to cover a lot of territory in one screenplay and that makes the story line go in all directions. I'm aware that many of the sub plots could be developed into whole screenplays. A lot of people have expressed similar sentiments in terms of wishing the story threads would continue or become more developed.

Right again. The relationship between Trinity and Neo is definitely soap opera territory. It's not shoot'em up, like we're used to. I chose to make their interaction be about gaining peace, resolution, truth and a stable (albeit strange) world. It's definitely a departure from the Trilogy, but I think those things are what Neo was searching for from the beginning. Not everyone's cup of tea, I guess.

And I think you're right about the dream sequence in the beginning being too long or not spaced out enough. I'll have to fix that if the screenplay catches.

But I thought the focus on Smith was fairly developed; he has battles with Neo and the Zion guards, escapes from Zion, reintegrates into the Matrix, has a battle with Seraph and the Agents, and finally attacks the machine mainframe. Most of those scenes were pretty ACTION heavy, too.

I also thought the Persephone and Merovingian story was fairly well thought out and quite compelling. They meet and are instantly attracted to each other, marry, and have Trinity, all while developing the Cortex brain to house the Super Matrix. They take responsibility for the Cortex's disruptive anomaly, enter the Super Matrix, and are consequently unable to return. Having been lost to the Super Matrix, they discover and begin to abuse their unique abilities and fall from grace while consolidating their empire. They have run-ins with the Oracle and Agent Smith, where they establish their position in the Matrix power structure. I admit, not much action, but some nice tension and, in their first scene, some playful flirtation. I dug it.

If you feel so inclined, I suggest you skim the screenplay again. I think you missed the part about how people in the Source are almost all familial volunteers. The Architect, Trinity, Merovingian, and Persephone are all related; as well, the Oracle, Jason, and Morpheus are all family.

I definitely understand the part about how stories should have many paths that converge at the end and tie up the threads. But in this particular case I chose not to do

so. Yes, it probably won't sell in Hollywood; but I really like most of the story as it is. A lot more could come of it, if the right circumstances presented themselves.

As far as tension, unpredictability, and conflict are concerned, the story may not have packed them in, but to say that it "ain't got any" seems a bit strong.

I appreciate that you took the time to read the screenplay and make thoughtful, specific comments. I didn't love them all but many of them were right on the money. I'll take your advise if this thing ever moves beyond my website.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Rueben DATE: 9/18/2008 3:11:09 AM

i thought it was going to be one giant punch line. but i am a huge fan of the matrix some of my friends not so. i read the scrip and i say, its a real mind bender. ha, and i thought first was bad. so the moral of the story here is that you think your mind can't bend spoons anymore than it can, what happens its twists and bends even more. only dislike i have that is that the end of the super matrix with the whole neo jr?? if you can get back to me with some info thanks

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/19/2008 12:38:55 AM

Reuben,

Glad you enjoyed it. What kind of info we're you looking for?

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: rueben DATE: 9/20/2008 7:40:02 PM

yeah i was just wondering what your true intentions on your super matrix story. are you going to go with a spin off story with it like a book or mini series show, or going to push towards a movie. if you do push it towards a movie there's a few things i think it might be missing in it. then you might already know a few of them. the matrix is one of a biggest actions movie, so more big action climax fighting.example when neo fights smith at the end of the first one and the ending fight with him again at the third matrix. i forget a some things i had to say about it but i get back to you.

one of my biggest things is when i read the story it just ended. which i a had another set of questions. whats with the baby at the end? it goes the baby floating the blocks then the end?? what about mr smith in the matrix will neo finally go in a kick his ass or tricked into another matrix. sorry, just a small joke to your story.

i have been talking to some of my friends about your story most our oh no not a another matrix movie. but a few others are like well never know it might be better then the second and third one. i am all for it if you do. any ways i will be waiting for your response back

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/20/2008 8:39:46 PM

rueben,

I suggest you read the other comments left on this website; I'm pretty sure they'll answer all the questions you have. If you have more questions that aren't answered by the comments, just let me know. I'll see if I can answer them.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Daxxian DATE: 9/29/2008 3:02:44 PM

Between the second and third movie, my fan group came up with a lot of the same ideas. I love how it ties in the origin and purpose of the Merovingian, but his quarrel with the Oracle seemed a little unfounded, it could be based on a bit more than arrogance. Overall spectacular concepts. I think it bothered a lot of people how Neo struck down the sentinals in the second movie.
it will be a little hard to get Gloria Foster for the original Oracle, but good luck to you.
oh, one more thing, more on the androids, thier cool. and less on Smith, he is old news.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ilias DATE: 9/30/2008 12:40:49 AM

Hello there, i'm a matrix fan from Greece(Sorry for my bad English :P). Reading your story i have to say Bravo! Your story is so great! But i liked the way the original trilogy ended :p (Sorry mate) . But if this absolutly wonderful story will ever hit the big screen then i would DEFINETLY see it. Again congratulations and thank you for keeping the matrix saga alive :)!!!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ufuk DATE: 9/30/2008 10:22:45 AM

Excellent, attentive, attractive, writing

Ufuk(not a curse it is my name means Horizon :)) from Turkey (not a animal it is a country name.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/30/2008 7:46:06 PM

Daxxian,

I appreciate the comments.

Yeah, I agree, the Merovingian's quarrel with the Oracle is a little thin; that was more a page constraint issue than anything else. I would've liked to flesh it out more.

I'm not sure how to tackle the Gloria Foster issue; guess I'll just have to solve it in production...ha, ha!

And, yes, the androids we're a fun development; I'd love to flesh them out more, too. Maybe in Matrix 5? (Nah!)

Smith is old news, but he's still a bad-ass that people love to hate. Besides, life in the Matrix would be too quiet without him. Had to keep him in.

Thanks again. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/30/2008 7:48:23 PM

Ilias,

It's been a pleasure writing the story and hearing everyone's comments. I'm still trying to have some top brass read it.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/30/2008 8:02:36 PM

Ufuk from Turkey,

Thank you for the concise, flattering review. Even a few words can make my day.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: james hofstrand DATE: 10/8/2008 8:57:12 PM

Wood-

. . .i didnt think there could be a 4th matrix, i thought that the way they (the wachowski's) left it was good, and there didnt need to be anymore to the story. . .

. . .you've proved me wrong, i am hooked,

is there anyway for the 4th movie to be written off of your script? (not that you havent tried yet)

i know that this could make the wachowski brothers do some soul searching and realize there is still some magic left in the world. . .

happy hunting-

-Snowman

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/8/2008 8:59:21 PM

Snowman,

Thanks for the upbeat review. I'm still trying to get this story to the Wachowskis. If I succeed, I'll be posting it on my website, don't you worry.

Cheers. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Daniel DATE: 10/11/2008 2:03:05 AM

Excellent read.. and you're not getting paid? (WB.. whats the deal.) We need more Persephone!!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/11/2008 3:12:01 AM

Daniel,

Just getting paid in compliments. Doesn't buy much food and drink but what are ya going to do? Keep writing the good write, I guess. Go Peresphone!

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Dorian Thiessen DATE: 10/25/2008 9:21:31 PM

wow this was really good, i was confused how u said the Merovingian(victor) and his wife had powers, since in the second and third matrix it doesn't show that at all... but u should copyright this or w/e as soon as u can so no one steals it from u and makes millions... and also how does that work, neo has a kid? but seriously he was in the matrix, so im assuming his gf rachel was also in the matrix.. so how is she out of the matrix and how did she get pregnant in the matrix, and have a kid outside of it?? or leave with the kid... im just confused about that.. other than that it was amazing!!! plz plz plz make a sequal.. im dieing to find out about the neo jr and stuff.. even if u just add alittle bit PLZ do. then itd be nice if u could email me when u do.. hotmail is hot100_pyro@hotmail.com

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/26/2008 5:56:11 PM

Dorian,

I appreciate your enthusiasm for the screenplay. Thanks.

The screenplay is copyrighted in the Library of Congress and registered with the Writer's Guild of America, so I've done all I can to protect my interests at this point. Hopefully, that's enough.

As to your confusion, I think you're a bit unclear on the separation of the Matrix and the Super Matrix.

In the Matrix, years before Neo meet Trinity, Neo had a girlfriend named Rachel. She became pregnant with his child, but, because their relationship fell apart soon after, she never told him about the baby. The first scene with Rachel is Neo's unconscious mind tapping into previous events in the Matrix. He's beginning to discover the truth. But it's important to remember that Rachel and her son, Neo Jr., never exist outside of the Matrix. The ending scene is just a visual trip for the audience to move into the Matrix and see that Rachel's son has powers like Neo's and the suggestion is that he will somehow take over where Neo left off.

As for the Merovingian and Persephone, I think you are forgetting that the Merovingian is able to write programs that alter or manipulate his surroundings as he did with the woman in his restaurant who was served the magical dessert. He also exits out a door after Neo wins the big fight scene with the Merovingian's henchmen. His exit changes, as we see when Neo tries to go through it and ends up thousands of miles away. My assumption is that he has powers, but he uses them discreetly. I also assume that Persephone has similar powers but feels no need to use them. She lets her husband do the dirty work.

Anyway, those are my explanations. I hope they clarify things a bit.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Dorian DATE: 10/26/2008 10:10:49 PM

hello again.. i didnt read the ending properly, so i didnt notice trinity say ur gf from the matrix.. i thought she ment in the real world.. which would have been really intence because that would mean someone really did have real powers... i think u should write more and make it so neo discovers he has skills in the real world.. and maybe tries to go back into the supermatrix... that would be sweet!! please let me know if you like the idea.. and i think, u remember when u made neo say he felt this before twice, in the matrix when he was dieing? that could lead to him using his powers in the real world.. i think everyone would agree with me that that would be a relly cool idea.. :D

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/27/2008 9:03:56 PM

Dorian,

Although the story could go in many directions and I do like your ideas, I feel like I've taken my story as far as I would like. If the Wachowski or Warner brothers sanction further episodes, well, maybe I would bite. But until that happens (!?), I'm just going to leave well enough alone.

Thanks for the kind words. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mark Spaulding DATE: 10/28/2008 6:10:47 PM

PD Wood,

I have been a fan of the Matrix from day one. I saw the original in the theater when most people did not even know anything about it. Parts two and three to me were a bit lacking in some of their content, but I loved them anyway because I liked the main characters and wanted to see more of them. I was just curious the other day to see if anything was being done to produce a Matrix 4 film. That is when I ran across your screenplay. I have very little time at the present to do much reading but I figured I would give it a few minutes to see what I thought. Honestly, as I sat here reading your work, I was seeing the images flashing before my eyes. I thought it was fascinating. I am not here to offer a criticism. Having, written a book of my own, I already know how hard of a task this can be. I just want you to know that I thoroughly enjoyed your work and I would go see this movie in a heartbeat were it ever made. I thought your character dialog was right on target. I could expand on that comment at your request.

Unfortunately, or fortunately (however, you could interpret it) I want more. As tired of this story as you might be, it is an intriguing one to be sure. And the characters, are truly complex and endearing. You are a very talented writer and have a clear grasp on this idea. I would applaud your desire to do original work, but there is no conflict to doing another edition of your Matrix development at the same time. Don't know your schedule but it is something to consider...Is it not, Mon Ami (a little Merovingian humor).

I'm not really a critic, but one who enjoyed it very much. There is no way in the world with all the CGI action stuff in all these movies being made that you won't experience similarities in storyline etc. i.e. Terminator...I Robot etc. and etc. So don't let the comments of those who spend their time trying to find these similarities to "burst your

bubble" bother you. They will always be there. I thoroughly enjoyed your work and would like to see more of the same. And I would be the first in line to see the big screen production of Matrix 4.

Thanks again for all your hard work. It brought some much needed joy and a two hour respite to my present circumstances. Great job!!! Write back any time. PS Did you ever submit it to WB or anyone else...I think it could be very big box office in the future considering some of the crap coming out of Hollywood lately. Be hopeful and encouraged.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/28/2008 8:13:15 PM
Mark,

Those are some of the nicest comments I've received recently. I'm glad you were able to squeeze in a couple of hours of reading and that the screenplay didn't disappoint. As you said, writing a book/screenplay is a lot of work; I guess we've both been there.

You mentioned that the character dialog was "right on target", which I appreciate. What I hear very little about from readers, though, is which specific scenes of dialog were really intriguing or gripping. Perhaps you could point out one or two that you really liked and why.

As for writing more...well, perhaps...if a new story line hits me the way the Super Matrix story line did; that one just blossomed in my head almost instantly. And, really, the impetus for more would probably come more easily if I could get some professional interest in the Super Matrix story.

And speaking of professional interest, I recently sent the story to a professional, currently-employed-in-a-high-profile-TV- series actor who was a school mate of mine in college. It's been only a week, so no response yet, but it seems like the best avenue I can find to move it up the Hollywood ladder. Hope it hooks.

Thanks again for the glowing comments. At the moment I am definitely very hopeful and encouraged.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Andrea Bartley DATE: 10/29/2008 3:23:46 PM

I like the screenplay ive been dying for a new matrix movie i just cant handle the end of Neo and im glad they broght Trinity back. I dont think Neo fits the original Neo in the movie. In the screenplay he questions almost everything and in the movie he knows what he can and cant trust so he doesnt question anything and the matrix itself doesnt sound the same. One thing i do like is the fighting its very original and very Neo.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/29/2008 8:29:47 PM

Andrea,

Glad you liked it overall.

Yes, Neo does a lot of questioning in my screenplay. Hard to say whether it's in character or not. Just remember, this is the second time Neo has gone through a radical transformation of his reality. The first time is hard enough to believe and come to grips with, but a second time might throw anyone into a serious questioning mood. The new world he enters is also quite different from the world of Zion in that Neo is no longer in the position of having to be a savior. When there's that kind of pressure on you, questioning starts to look like a serious weakness, don't you think? And the sense of urgency has been removed, too. He has time to reflect and question. Just a few points to make my case.

I definitely enjoyed writing the fight scenes. I particularly like the one where the android 36's attack the fortified castle.

Thanks for the kind words. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Brian W DATE: 11/1/2008 12:18:18 PM

hey have you sent the Matrix 4 script to the Wachowski Bros?? and if u have sent it, have they sent feedback to you??

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Anthony H DATE: 11/10/2008 8:43:08 AM

Man, where do i begin ?

So much of this story was so extremely satisfying...

Superbly Creative, especially finding out that humans are actually still in control and Zion is another form of a Matrix program...

to keep the machines under wraps ?...

Sh*t...get outta here...

i love it.

The way you linked all the characters together as family and such was very appealing.

Neo finding peace in his new home with the woman he loves...

that'd be nutts ! waking up to find the one you loved who'd died still exists...

and toltally remembers you...

Obviously, the way you kept so many elements connected in your own rendition of the continuation of this story was really impressive.

(Fattest run-on sentence i've ever made) :)...

as a few people commented, there was a lot left out... and your point is to leave these things open ended to let we the readers use our imagination.

The bottom line is that this was an independent project that you did for your own reasons...to critique the quality of the screen play is silly...

i think your goal was to create a decent continuation and answer a lot of questions...

and you did, man.

your story was amazing...

But as a bitchen writer, you've created so many new questions in the process...

i know you're potentially burnt out...

and i hate to critique, but this is with all do respect, sir...
i think you have creative talent... and i think to imply that little Neo will grow up and maybe take on Smith is an easy way out... Smith alone and his new power is enough for shit to get catastrohic ASAP !
i think you maybe wanted to end the project and that was how... you said you were burnt, right ?
i understand as an artist, and that might be what i would do too... But
Mr. Wood, saying anything is too much is mere opinion...

All i can do is say... to me, you are a hero, man. for creating this...
i encourage you to think of the countless people you've brought joy to. and as much time as you spent on this, you know damn well as i do, that this was a mere fraction of the storie's potential.you've opened possibility to me for a whole new trilogy... and is that really so awful ? the only other big movie i know of was Star Wars...
And by the way... What if Neo wanted to free his son ? or unite with him ? or whatever... ?
dude, you have the power here, and not to put the pressure on your shoulders... but you've become like Spidey, great power, great responsibility... you've already affected lord knows how many lives ? imagine if you held on to this fight ?
i higly encourage you , my friend to keep going, for us... do it for other people at best, you're already a hero, but dissapointment is to be had by many others... to get no more from you...
But, now that i think about it, maybe you'd WANT me and whoever to coninue your story ? maybe Neo finding his son is how i am supposed to continue this.
maybe i will. But i say, take a break for a while, and get your ass back to work, man !

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/11/2008 1:52:08 AM
Anthony,

Thanks for the effusive praise; I'm happy the screenplay brought you such enjoyment. And I appreciate you commenting on the specific elements of the screenplay that captured your imagination (i. e. humans still in control, linking the characters together, Neo waking to find the one he loves). Now you've got me in a corner with all that enthusiasm; you have a talent for what to say to make a writer want to do more.

And it's not that I don't have more ideas; I could go on for many screenplays. But even while I was writing the Super Matrix, I always felt like it wasn't my own project. Yes, it's my story line, but the underlying theme belongs to someone else.

I've been trying hard to shop the Super Matrix around and see if someone in Hollywood will bite. Nothing yet. If there's enthusiasm for what I've done from that corner of the movie world, I'll do more with the story. But until then, I'm going to stick to my guns and work on something of my own. That doesn't mean I'll never come back to it; but it does mean I've got other things to accomplish first.

And by all means take a crack at further episodes. I'm building on someone else's work; you can certainly build on top of mine. But be warned, it's a long trip down the rabbit

hole trying to write a screenplay of any kind. As much as I loved writing this thing, it also beat the **** out of me. Nice to have it done! Hard to do more!

Once again, thanks for the fantastic and thoughtful encouragement and comments. Really made my day. And check in in another 8 to 12 months; maybe I'll have done a 180 and will be fully embarked on another episode. You never know.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: K-BL DATE: 11/16/2008 1:13:47 AM

I really liked the Matrix 4 script that you wrote. The only flaw, in fact, that I found was that it left me hanging for another. Do you plan on writing another Matrix script? I mean, you have a story that you want to tell, tell us what it is. Complete your trilogy....

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/16/2008 1:25:55 AM

K-BL,

If that's the only flaw you can find, I'll take that as a supreme compliment.

The issue of "more to come" has been discussed quite a bit in the other comments; please take a look at them for an indepth answer to your question. In fact the comment previous to yours was about just the same thing.

Thanks for taking the time to read the screenplay and leave me some feedback. Always a day-maker.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: creeper DATE: 11/18/2008 10:08:10 AM

I stopped reading after the second page because the first scene is crap and the characters are all wrong. First it shouldn't start with some boring dialog. Secondly the characters personality and attitudes are all wrong. The last time Morpheus and Niobe talked with Lock they were pissed at him so the way both of them acted toward Lock is bull because Morpheus (in Revolutions) believed with every ounce of his being that Neo saved them. So Morpheus, in his first line would have disagreed with lock and would probably said something along the lines of "I know what happened, Neo saved us." Also, Morpheus would have argued with locks third line, "i don't believe we have the luxury of assuming the war is over." Because he believed Neo would bring an end to the war. That is my rant. This script is crap. Agree or not i don't care.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/18/2008 9:20:25 PM

creeper,

I'm surprised you found my opening scene to be so unbelievable. The first thing Lock says is, " It sure looks like a miracle to me," immediately establishing his tacit

acceptance of Morpheus's beliefs and thereby setting up a positive relationship between all three of them. He even goes one step further and directly apologizes to them. Then Niobe and Morpheus in return show respect for Lock by agreeing to work with him. And given that the machines have left and the war appears to be over, it didn't seem to me that at that moment those three would be in a particularly adversarial mood. Cooperation looked like a plausible direction. Just my opinion, though.

I would have been more open to your overall assessment of the script being crap if you had managed to read past page 2 and then make your proclamation. Personally, I think you missed an interesting if not though provoking story merely because the first two pages were disappointing. If you read the whole thing and still think it's unworthy, I'd be more than willing to accept your assessment of the entire script. I hope you take the time to read it. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: anthony H, yes i'm back ! DATE: 11/20/2008 8:41:16 AM

Dude ! i wondered to myself if i'd have the priveledge to get a response back...

sure enough, you're a damn cool cat, man.

Respect... after reading other people's comments where they seem to be talkin sum Sh*t, i'd like to say something encouraging, but i can tell you've got a good attitude and i haven't read any reply that sounded out of line... :)

you telling me my words are encouraging for you as a writer, is a compliment, indeed. thank you.

bro, i understand how this entire story had to whup your ass for sure...

art requires time and incredible self discipline, i imagine especially in this realm of writing...

One small counterattack i must throw out in regards to building off someone elses work is this. if i vaguely know correctly, George Lucas was the original writer of StarWars, him or whoever it was , right ? but my man , if you look around, you will find "HUNDREDS" of continuation and side stories written by completely outside parties, and guess what ? they sell. and a lot of em are rad (good word, right)

Because a lot of people really love the StarWars universe. and like myself in the end, don't really give a sh*t who wrote 'em... how bout spiderman, x men, you think it was the same author the entire time who wrote the thousads of stories. what is important if you do continue i think is to make sure to stay true to the original universe and characters a certain way so as to not create contradictions. A simple encouragement for you, You yourself already said you have more ideas brewing for this right ?

it kind of sucks because i really like this story as it is, but in order to create more detail with the future stories to come, i almost want to say to maybe look at this as a rough draft perhaps ? it's like SO MUCH was crammed into this one story, and as i said, you've created incredible potential for more. Dude, The story of the renegade robots trying to sabotage things for the humans in the real, real world is a whole, entire new story in itself ! what would be to come after Smith whoops ass on the dominating machines, as well, maybe eventually they'd fight back, so many new turns and openings, here !!!

dude, i don't know, you've opened up so many ideas, perhaps you could work on your own project, and also keep flowing WITH this Matrix continuation. It's Bad ass, bro !

Remember all the authors who continue on Starwars. i know you'd face a tedious battle

to continue, but i totally believe in you , man. screw hollywood if they give you the finger.

you've already built a fanbase.

on your own story, i see you creating a bad ass fiction, and published or not, you got one fan that'll be there to read... just thought of this. have you thought of WRITING a new Martix trilogy in three books ? not so much screen plays for movies ? just an idea, till next time, best of luck either way you go... But seriously, keep going, damn it. :D

Respect and Peace...anthony

p.s. thanx again for writing , man.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: eon DATE: 11/21/2008 1:23:42 AM

I must say really acute storyline, and also the visuals.now come the "But".

i think all this speculation about the supermatrix, and making the world of zion to be just another matriculated illusion, is arising from the need to explain Neo's powers in the zion world,in previous movies. I cannot believe that the movies can have such mono directional interpretation.

In the movies Neo had the powers(in zion world) just to manipulate machines, but in the "Matrix" he had much more freedom like to manipulate space (like flying,stopping bullets etc..)and other programs(the smith explosion in the first movie).It clearly tells that zion world is not like the matrix.

we know that only the people with plugging holes to be connected can go inside the matrix. they are a kind of cyborgs, but they can as well carry themselves a device to get remotely connected.

One possible answer to the things shown in the movie is by some kind of wireless communication between Neo's brain the machines and even the matrix Network, which is done exactly as when a person is plugged into the matrix, but now the information being transfered through different medium.

However this was possible only when Neo had reached the source and talked to the architect. it was this change which helped him to understand the machine language in "zion world" and finally to hack them, and ordered the machines to destroy themselves. just as similar when smith(neo's counterpart) intruded the zion world by hacking in to a real person's brain.

but i really liked the idea of smith getting into a person's brain and keeping a backup of his copy for future use, which he did very interestingly in your version.

anyway this can take us much far from your version of matrix 4, and to a completely new set of ideas for matrix 4.

one of them to start with could be that neo also has putted a copy of his self in the matrix in the form of a virtual human, and contacts morpheus.

one thing which i want to say is that , you have putted quite an amount of soap to the

movie, by making everyone else the son or daughter of the other, which i find really annoying (i m srry).

anyways i really loved the reading, and may be read it one more time. you are really very talented. hope to see your name under the screenplay writer in a movie of your own original idea.

good luck

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/21/2008 2:15:28 AM
Anthony H,

Not to worry. If I'm not mistaken, I think I've responded to every single comment within 24 hours. I figure I owe it to anyone who takes the time and effort to read the story, go back to my site and write me a comment.

Your attitude and words are also very encouraging; you kind of know just what to say to make a conductor want to keep the train rolling. But wanting and doing are two different things. The Super Matrix story really was an exercise in fun and a way for me to cut my teeth as a screenwriter; I was pretty sure fame and fortune would not be an end result. With this story under my belt I'm looking to write screenplays that will actually sell and make it to the big screen (if that's at all possible). Unfortunately, continuing the Matrix story is not likely to generate income or make it to the big screen despite the fact that , as you say, there is SO MUCH potential in the story.

The desire to write original material in addition to feeling a bit burnt out with the Super Matrix story are the reasons I'm not going to pursue more Matrix stuff right now. I'd really like to be known more for my own original work than just as the guy who piggybacked on the Wachowski world. Like I said, though, who knows what the future holds. I'm still sending the screenplay into the Hollywood stream hoping for a bite. Give me six months to a year, let me write one or two screenplays of my own and, by then, maybe I'll be chomping at the bit for some more Matrix yum yum!

I'll keep your words in mind and don't think I haven't been flattered. I think you give me too much. Let's just hope I'm not a one-hit wonder.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/21/2008 2:58:48 AM
Eon,

All your comments are thoughtful and precise. I'm glad you found so much enjoyment in the reading even though there were many parts that didn't fit the way you might have hoped.

Many of the issues you have with the story have been talked about in earlier comments

and I urge you to read them so you can see what my rationale was for many of my storyline choices. And, yes, reading the story a second time can help clarify many issues and give you a fuller understanding of the story. It's pretty dense and the time jumping can be hard to follow on the first read.

If you do read it again, I think you'll see that I go to great lengths to establish that the world of Zion is not just another matriculated illusion (which, I agree, would give it a mono directional interpretation). I point out that all worlds whether virtual or seemingly real or just as valid and tangible. Morpheus goes to great lengths to convince Neo that reality is just a series of electrical impulses interpreted by your brain. For Morpheus this is a justification to reject the simulated world of the Matrix; but for me it is an argument that establishes the validity and realness of the Matrix or any world that you experience. So in this sense the Matrix world, the Zion world, and the world of the Cortex and Super Matrix are all equally real worlds to be treated with the same respect and compassion.

It's also important to note that most of my story happens outside of the Zion and Matrix worlds; the rules in the world of the Cortex and the Super Matrix are different so not every explanation that was given in Reloaded and Revolutions is going to pertain to them.

Your idea of Neo putting a backup copy into the Matrix the way Page Smith put one into Zion opens up a lot of possibilities. In a way, though, that is what Neo has done (albeit inadvertently) at the end of my story. Neo's old girlfriend, Rachel, has chosen to bring to term, bear, and raise Neo's son without his knowledge. It's kind of like a backup copy he doesn't know he has.

For me it's too bad you didn't like the idea of the extended families. Personally, I found that to be one of the most intriguing ideas about my story. I guess it is kind of soapy in a way...but for me, it's a good way. I like the dramatic irony of things such as Morpheus and Lock being brothers, of the Oracle their mother. I thought it was a stroke of genius to make the familial ties between the Architect, the Merovingian, Persephone and Trinity. Talk about Freud's wet dream of psychoanalysis. And perhaps that's exactly why you think it's soapy. Anyway, I absolutely love that aspect of the story and the way each revelation of it slowly unfolds. It was really fun to sort out. Perhaps with a second reading you'll see more to it than just a superficial soapy film but rather a deep-cleaning, sudsy-actioned car wash of the soul (that's a mouthful!).

Thanks so much for the comments, critique, and praise. Always food for thought. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Anthony H DATE: 11/21/2008 7:05:14 AM

Respect, i think this is a battle with which i can sheathe my sword to...
your story was bithcen either way...

if you happen to have all the emails of those us who've written. please do inform we the masses of when YOUR story comes out...

My best wishes to you in getting into hollywood, i reckon you're in for the fight of your life.

however, in theory, if you have enough cash flow, you can create your own independent project.

Should i get no email down the road...

i'm sure i'd recognize the name PD wood when it gets big...

keep pushin yourself, hard...

till next time.

peace and respect

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/21/2008 9:03:39 PM

Anthony H,

The respect is mutual. And any screenplay that I finish, I will definitely bring to my audience in one form or another (hopefully as a completed movie!). Your kind words have given me renewed confidence that my next work will hopefully share similar traits of "bitchiness".

Thanks again and see you in the movies.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Alan H. DATE: 11/28/2008 3:50:50 AM

I really love your Matrix 4: The Super Matrix story and really looking forward to see it coming to screen. Keep up a good job!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/28/2008 2:40:05 PM

Alan H.

I appreciate the good word. Still working on the movie angle.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Joe DATE: 11/30/2008 4:03:44 PM

Thanks for this, just read it in one reading, as suggested.

I will return to read all of the comments when I have more time.

I hope this makes it to screen, I enjoyed it very much.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/30/2008 8:08:37 PM

Joe,

Your enjoyment is my enjoyment. Thanks for reading.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Randy DATE: 12/6/2008 6:35:20 PM

read this over at simplyscripts.com and what I have to say is wow. That was amazing.

Truly amazing. Started reading and didn't miss a beat till I was done. It was all there.

What a hook. I could not imagine Matrix 4 being anything else after reading this.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/7/2008 10:42:35 PM

R B,

I'm happy to see that the screenplay is getting some attention over there at simplyscripts.com.

Getting the hook in early in the story was key to getting people to read the whole thing.

Nice to know that there was a prizewinning fish attached to the hook for you.

Thanks for the very encouraging words. Hopefully, it will be just as powerful on the big screen. Yeah! PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: WhiteSheWolf DATE: 12/13/2008 5:12:59 AM

I just finished reading your screenplay for the first time, and all I can say is wow.

I happened upon this quite by accident; I was raking the web for rumors of an actual Matrix 4, when I stumbled upon your screenplay. It is intelligent, coherent, and well-written...not to mention that it fits in perfectly with the series.

I really would love to say more, but frankly I'm still thoroughly confused and need some processing time :-P

My only negative comment would be that the end seemed slightly abrupt...but that could just be me.

I'd pretty much die of joy if this was made into an actual movie.

- Wolf Out.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/13/2008 2:23:15 PM

WhiteSheWolf,

Coming across it unexpectedly is probably the nicest way to encounter the story; no preconceived notions or forum members totting it as the best (or worst) thing they've ever read. Just a fresh read.

I'm very happy to hear that you enjoyed it so much and that you think it fits in with the Trilogy. Yes, the ending is a bit abrupt and open-ended. Some people like it; most people think it leaves too much unsaid. Just about everyone sees another episode after it. Personally, I like that it leaves people thinking about what could happen.

I'm guessing your comment about being confused stems from the many flashbacks and timeline shifts. If that's true, I think a very quick second read will clarify the story immensely, now that you have the basic thread in your mind. If it's another issue that's confusing you, please let me know and I'll try to clarify.

Thanks again for reading and commenting.

PD Out

COMMENT: AUTHOR: iFiction DATE: 12/14/2008 4:04:52 AM

I must say I enjoy your writing style very much, and you clearly have a lot of good ideas you are working with in this script, but as a Matrix fan, I'm not sure it really fits very well with the rest of the series.

For starters, it seems like you backtrack from all of the third film's philosophical conclusions in order to take everything in a new direction that the Wachowski Brothers decidedly avoided in *Revolutions*. The whole Matrix-within-a-Matrix idea is something I seem to recall the Wachowski Brothers discounting as a move that would cheapen the weight of events thus far. I also don't see the philosophical importance of making such a move, as the Matrix already shakes the very foundations of our conceptions of static reality, and I don't think a "Super Matrix" really adds anything to this. For me, the Source, along with the entire world of the Machines, represents something so infinitely complex that it could not begin to be captured by the human mind, and thus a human-controlled Matrix couldn't possibly contain it. I definitely would like to see the Source explored further in a new Matrix film, but in a way that fully communicates the sense of mystery and awe such an exploration should convey.

As I said, you seem to be a very talented writer, and I applaud you for looking deeper into the Matrix and wishing for a continuation of the series, just as I do. However, I don't think this is the right direction for a fourth Matrix film to take. In addition to the larger philosophical issue I've outlined above, there are also a few technical issues to consider. First of all, the Matrix Online is already continuing the story of the Matrix series in an episodic format, detailing for its players the events following the conclusion of the third film. As this story is told in an interactive format, the game's players tend to feel attached to these events as they occur, and would likely feel incredibly cheated if a new Matrix film just erased the whole thing from a fictional existence in connection with the larger series. As such, I believe a fourth Matrix film would have to take place well after the third film (perhaps over a decade), so that the events of Matrix Online could be incorporated within the continuity of the larger Matrix series.

Also, there are a few specific things within your script that don't seem to fit within a larger series continuity. For one, when Merv meets the Oracle, Seraph would not be at her side at that moment in Matrix history. Seraph used to work for the Merovingian, which is why he knew every detail of Club Hel, and why its guards called him "Wingless," referring to Seraphim, the fallen angels from which he gets his name. Early in your script, Neo refers to a promise of peace that the Architect made, but the Architect made no such promise. In the events leading to the final battle of *The Matrix: Revolutions*, Neo spoke to Deus Ex Machina, the voice of the Machine City, not the Architect.

Additionally, you have Trinity being awakened from the Matrix in her twenties, where it is suggested in the first film that almost all Redpills are awakened when they are very young, and that only for a special circumstance (such as the return of the One) will they awaken an adult. I think, as well, that scenes with the Oracle would be challenging to pull off, as the actress who played the Oracle before her transformation between *Reloaded* and *Revolutions*, is unfortunately no longer with us. It seems to be implied that the Oracle has not changed form in Morpheus' lifetime, as he is surprised to see

she does not appear as she once did when he encounters her at the beginning of the third film. It is possible that she has changed form in between the meeting with the Merovingian you outline and her time with Morpheus, but the audience might be confused by two actresses playing one character in the past and present. Speaking of, how do you reconcile the Oracle's change in form with her presence as a single human being in the world outside the Super Matrix?

Speaking, once again, of the script's central concept of the Super Matrix, I'm thinking it may not be the most marketable concept. You may have had in mind concepts of Aurobindo's Supermind or Neitzche's Superman, but it may, in the trailers, come across more like Super Mario Brothers.

That said, I love a lot about the script. The surrealist passages are fascinating, and you've certainly mastered the art of the chronology shift. The story of the freedom-fighter androids (and the "future" Earth in which they live) is very compelling, and you've added a brilliant touch of the surreal, as well, to their architecture and movement. It would be cool to see these elements explored in another script, possibly unconnected with Matrix lore.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: iFiction DATE: 12/14/2008 5:29:12 AM
(Continued from previous message.)

Additionally, you have Trinity being awakened from the Matrix in her twenties, where it is suggested in the first film that almost all Redpills are awakened when they are very young, and that only for a special circumstance (such as the return of the One) will they awaken an adult. I think, as well, that scenes with the Oracle would be challenging to pull off, as the actress who played the Oracle before her transformation between Reloaded and Revolutions, is unfortunately no longer with us. It seems to be implied that the Oracle has not changed form in Morpheus' lifetime, as he is surprised to see she does not appear as she once did when he encounters her at the beginning of the third film. It is possible that she has changed form in between the meeting with the Merovingian you outline and her time with Morpheus, but the audience might be confused by two actresses playing one character in the past and present. Speaking of, how do you reconcile the Oracle's change in form with her presence as a single human being in the world outside the Super Matrix?

Speaking, once again, of the script's central concept of the Super Matrix, I'm thinking it may not be the most marketable concept. You may have had in mind concepts of Aurobindo's Supermind or Neitzche's Superman, but it may, in the trailers, come across more like Super Mario Page Brothers.

That said, I love a lot about the script. The surrealist passages are fascinating, and you've certainly mastered the art of the chronology shift. The story of the freedom-fighter androids (and the "future" Earth in which they live) is very compelling, and you've added a brilliant touch of the surreal, as well, to their architecture and movement. It would be cool to see these elements explored in another script, possibly unconnected with Matrix lore.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/15/2008 12:53:55 AM
iFiction,

So nice to hear your comments and appreciation of the work I've put into this. The surreal passages were indeed a lot of fun. The chronology was a bitch. I had to map the whole thing out on a timeline and keep it next to me at all times while writing. Great fun to finally have all the chronological jigsaw pieces finally fit together, though. And the androids were compelling for sure. I would have liked to have more pages for them.

I can see you've really digested the script completely considering the depth and thoroughness of your insights. And on the whole I agree with (or at least understand the logic behind) most of your concerns.

As far as the Wachowski Brothers intentions are concerned, I don't recall them having commented specifically on the notion of a Matrix-within-a-Matrix or the cheapening effect that it might have on the Trilogy. Perhaps you could direct me to the source of that information as I would be very interested in reading it.

I think your points about the Matrix Online having already progressed the story and the consequent possibility of my story undermining that progression is valid with respect to hardcore Matrix fans. I'm not sure, however, that the softcore (?) Matrix fans would be as put off by it. Hard to know. Whether the other key elements of my story are challenging and exciting enough for the hardcore fans to be willing to overlook my exclusion of the Matrix Online's development is also hard to say. Hopefully, they will be.

You mention that "the Source, along with the entire world of the Machines, represents something so infinitely complex that it could not begin to be captured by the human mind, and thus a human-controlled Matrix couldn't possibly contain it". From the perspective of our current technology, I would agree with you that "a human-controlled Matrix couldn't possibly contain it", but my story takes place 240 years from now (AD 2249). I'm guessing that technology will have progressed quite far by then and perhaps we will have the capacities I talk about. Again, a leap of imagination.

The incorporation of a Matrix-within-a-Matrix was not so much a device used to create surprise as it was to introduce a nuanced and interconnected subplot. The battle of humans over androids was one of those subplots. For me the idea of the humans being in control of smart machines (in essence subjugating them for human exploitation) is a reversal of the human/machine dynamic in the Trilogy. Suddenly, we feel a weird sort of support for the underdog android 36s (we're almost rooting for the machines!), fighting for their very survival and independence against the (tyrannical?) humans. And then there's the family relationships. I thought this really added depth to the whole story. Here's what I wrote in an earlier comment: "I found the family relationships to be one of the most intriguing ideas about my story. I like the dramatic irony of things such as Morpheus and Lock being brothers, of the Oracle their mother. I thought it was a stroke of genius to make the familial ties between the Architect, the Merovingian, Persephone and Trinity. I absolutely love that aspect of the story and the way each revelation of it

slowly unfolds. It was really fun to sort out."

On the technical side there are definitely some tricky issues. You are one of the first to realize (or at least point out) that Trinity is awakened from her machine pod later than is considered safe or ideal. This was kind of a necessary compromise to make my story work, but I don't think it's completely contradictory to the first film. Morpheus states that "there is a rule that we do not free a mind once it reaches a certain age", but he does brake the rule to awaken Neo and it is successful. I also give my decision a little more authority by having the Oracle directed Morpheus to free Trinity, so an argument could be made that freeing Trinity was an integral part of fulfilling the prophecy despite the risks. A stretch, I admit, but not completely unfathomable. A keen eye, picking that one up!

The feasibility of Oracle scenes are a bit of a challenge, too, I agree. But not impossible to remedy. If you'll notice, there's really only one point in my story where the original actress (who has passed away) might be expected to appear. This is in the beginning of the script where, right after Neo encounters his old girlfriend, Rachel, he is called into an apartment by the Oracle who eventually helps him lie down because he is consumed by tiredness (page 13). Her other appearances are either in flashbacks, which would require an Oracle of a much younger age (who could be played by a different young actress), or in current scenes which would be played by the woman who replaced the original Oracle in the third episode. A bit tricky, but not impossible. Again, though, keen eye.

You also say, "...how do you reconcile the Oracle's change in form with her presence as a single human being in the world outside the Super Matrix?". I attribute her change in appearance inside the Matrix to medical procedures (not specified but perhaps brain surgery?) she is undergoing while in the real world. If you'll look back at page 95 of the screenplay, you'll see that the Architect says to the Oracle, "How're you feeling after your last medical procedure?". This was a hint at what might have caused her to change. For me specifically, her physical transformation is a consequence of neural changes in her brain (due to her medical procedures) that alter the way the Matrix (Super Matrix) manifests her. Too much of a stretch?

And, yes, the name. So true. Super Mario Brothers. The name has gotten some bad press for just the reasons you've underlined. The "super" part of the title was supposed to refer to the "on top of, above, or over" meaning of the word "super", not the "powerful, awesome" meaning of the word. So the name may have to change. An earlier version of the script went by Matrix:Rememory. What do you think of that title?

It would be nice to take some of the elements of this story and put them into one of my own. They are, however, so closely aligned with the Matrix story, I don't know how well they would make the leap. I do love sci-fi and action, so maybe I'll do it someday.

Anyway, thanks for your penetrating analysis of the parts that don't work so well and for your effusive appreciation for the parts that do.

Write anytime. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: iFiction DATE: 12/15/2008 6:40:38 AM

The Source, to me, brings to mind conceptions of the Over-soul, the source of all creativity in the universe, and thus I find it hard to imagine that even several hundred years of technological development would manage to encapsulate that kind of power (if it is only humans that are developing the technology and not some sort of Artificially Intelligent Singularity, represented in the Matrix series by the Machines). In The Matrix: Revolutions, Neo discovers the Machines are made of light and says to Trinity, "I wish you could see them as I see them." Their Source is a brilliantly encapsulated source of all. It is Spirit itself. I don't see humans ever being able to achieve this on their own, especially as an artifice of war. Through the seemingly infinite complexity of Matrix, humans are subsumed in to the larger whole of the Machine mind, just as cells compose a body. The War that the humans continue to fight suggest they are part of a body that is not at peace. This of course, is just my interpretation of the films, and might not reflect the Wachowski Brothers' views, but it is a view influenced and/or echoed by the official philosopher commentaries on the Ultimate Matrix Collection.

Unfortunately, I can't find the Matrix-withina- Matrix comments I was talking about. It was probably something second-hand voiced by a member of the film's crew.

I did, however, remember something else about the evidence of Merv's relationship to Seraph. When the Merovingian sees Seraph in the Hel Club, he says "The Prodigal Child returns," and also refers to him as "Judas," suggesting he used to work for the Merovingian and betrayed him. So it doesn't make sense that Seraph works for the Oracle before Merv meets him.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/16/2008 2:27:03 AM
iFiction,

To postulate the advances of the next 250 years is tricky. If some estimates are right, there will be an exponential leap in technology. Even the Animatrix series shows great leaps in machine robotics and artificial intelligence, culminating in the rise of the machine culture. Perhaps it isn't too far removed, then, to suggest that humans could create a centralized system of machine control embodied in a virtual world. On the other hand 50 years ago people were predicting that in the year 2000 humans would be commuting in personal flying space vehicles and every home would have robot servants (a la The Jetsons). So much for that prediction.

It's probably true that such advanced states would be improbable achievements of the human race in the next few hundred years. I also agree that such achievements would more likely be the purview of artificially intelligent machines, ones of the highest purity, devoid of psychological or emotional entanglements. And I'm guessing that it is to this kind of machine evolution that most philosophers (commenting on the Matrix story) are obliquely referring.

With respect to the Merv/Seraph relationship, I again applaud your keen eye. Exactly

what Merv means by "the prodigal child returns" and "Judas" are up for interpretation, but your interpretation seems pretty good. Unless I can come up with some great rationale, I may have give the Oracle a different assistant.

Any other problems that you can point out are always appreciated. It's sometimes hard to see the forest through the trees.

Thanks again. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: vikas DATE: 12/30/2008 7:00:34 AM

i find the story boring - complete crap.i am sure no one can connect to the story. try to make the story more logical than going with your emotions.
don't want to discourage you just being honest.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/30/2008 2:57:35 PM

vikas,

I have no qualms if you find the story boring; that's your subjective reaction and you're entitled to it. But to just objectively label the story "complete crap" without any specific qualifiers tells me nothing about how you think it can be made less boring, less "crappy". It also assumes that everyone will have the same reaction as yours. I ask you, honestly; was it really complete crap or was it just partial crap? And, if just partially crappy, where might those partially crappy parts reside? Perhaps you could elaborate with specific examples.

Strangely enough, your certainty that "no one can connect to the story" is undermined by the fact that roughly 75% of readers who've left comments before you either liked or loved the story. That you were unable to connect with the story, I understand and accept; to say that "no one can't connect" is simply a matter of not paying attention.

"Try to make the story more logical than going with your emotions" is a very hard comment to decipher. Are you talking about character development, time structure, plotting, all of the above? Any comments about specific scenes, characters or plot structure would be more helpful.

I don't mind your honesty; but if your intention really was not to "discourage me", labeling the story "complete crap" with no specific examples on ways to improve it was not a successful way to achieve your objective.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Johnny V DATE: 1/3/2009 8:43:49 PM

MAN! This sounds REALLY GREAT!! Is it really Coming ?? How far is it along and will Mr K Reeves be playing the Star ?? I sure hope so, he is the best for the part!!

Please let me know about any developments and when the filming will start!!

CAN"T WAIT!!! OH YEAH!!!!!!

YAAAAAAA HOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO

:) Happy New Year!

JV

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Luke DATE: 1/4/2009 7:10:55 PM

Absolutely loved the script! When I first randomly saw this site and thought, oh someone wrote a screenplay for matrix 4, I was like "ahh probably wont live up to my expectations" but as I carried on reading it, I was most certainly hooked almost instantly.

I thought it couldn't be a good movie, maybe just nice filler for information, but then it hit a turning point and it got really good and I just spent the last 2 hours hooked, reading this script and loving every moment! but hating the fact you ended it!

Thank you for writing this awesome screenplay / script anyway, and to be perfectly honest, if they did make a matrix 4 and it didn't use this script, i'd be sadly disappointed. :(

But it's still Awesome, well done dude! :D

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/4/2009 9:44:45 PM

JV,

I share your enthusiasm for a forth episode but my story is just a fan fiction; it is not an official screenplay. I'm glad you liked the story and let's just hope Hollywood shows some interest at some point.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/6/2009 4:06:30 AM

Luke,

I think you came across it in the best way, not expecting much, then getting sucked into it. Very nice to hear your compliments. Glad you enjoyed it so much. Let's hope it hits the big screen someday.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Cam DATE: 1/8/2009 12:55:00 PM

Okay, I'll start this by saying that it was a great story. However it lacked substance and there were themes that were reminiscent of other sci-fi films that I've seen. For example, The Source controlling machines and evolving over time is very much like V.I.K.I. in I, Robot.

There were elements to the story that remained a bit vague, what happened to Smith? what of Morpheus, Niobe and Zion?, and certain characters were completely useless to the story telling process. The 'Android 36's' could've been left out completely as could Rachael and Neo's son.

I didn't so much mind the idea of a Super Matrix and The Source, but the building process and constant flashbacks made it kind of tedious and drawn out. The whole process could've been covered in one voice overed flashback/montage, like when Morpheus describes what The Matrix is to Neo for the first time, thus freeing up more room to develop themes and plot elements and make it less convoluted.

However, the history behind the Merovigian and Persephone was quite interesting, but was somewhat ruined by the fact that Trinity was their daughter, as did the fact that they were supposedly super powered, if they had the same powers as Neo or the agents, why didn't the Merovigian fight Neo himself?

Also, instead of being The Architect's son, the Merovigian could've been his partner in making this controlled world, and thus a close friend that has literally been consumed by his work and Persephone, not wanting to be without her love, put herself into the matrix so that they could be together and then the whole them growing apart thing could be a metaphor that absolute power corrupts even the purest love.

The lack of fight scenes really took away from the feel of it as being part of The Matrix world, as did the fact that Neo wasn't involved in any of them. The whole point of the matrix films was to tell the story of Neo being the one, the quest to save Zion from the machine threat and the ultimate goal of freedom from the matrix for all humanity.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/8/2009 8:53:19 PM
Cam,

I really appreciate your compliment that the story was great. And I understand how, at the same time, many elements may have been disappointing. Perhaps if I explain my intention with this story, it might make more sense or fit in better with the whole Matrix concept.

Although it begins directly where the Matrix Revolutions ended, this story is supposed to be kind of separate from the Trilogy. For me this approach helps preserve the original Trilogy concept while also allowing me to jump out of the Matrix world into a whole new world and concept. The story introduces this new world while at the same time explaining what led up to the first Matrix story.

The Trilogy focused on Neo's awakening, ascent to power, and his salvation of Zion; my story is primarily focused on Neo's reawakening in another new world, his reunion with Trinity, and his discovery of inner peace and his place in existence. In this respect Neo is removed from his roll as the crusading kung-fu warrior. I know many people will be looking for the Neo of the past, but I felt that his roll as a warrior had already been

played out pretty successfully in the Trilogy. So, you're right, this story definitely has a different flavor from the Trilogy.

That many elements are reminiscent of other sci-fi stories is true. People have made comparisons to the Terminator, the Thirteenth Floor, I Robot, Blade Runner, Star Trek episodes and even 2001: A Space Odyssey. It's hard not to overlap with these concepts as they are, to some degree, universal and indicative of the future. Even the stories that mine have been compared to have often also borrowed from or paralleled earlier sci-fi stories before them. It's kind of the nature of the beast a bit.

And, yes, there are many elements of the story that are a bit vague; my intention to some degree was to leave threads of the story open to interpretation. Sometimes a second reading will clarify some elements, as the the story is dense with place changes and time lines.

I think you might be right about condensing much of the explanations into a tighter, single diatribe (like when Morpheus tells Neo about the Matrix). That would require quite a rework, though. Perhaps I'll do it after I've finished my own original screenplay.

The "Neo, Rachel, Neo's son" thing...yep, that one throws a lot of people. Probably should be removed.

What surprised me was that you thought the android 36 thread was without merit. I personally thought that was one of the most interesting parts. It's a reversal of the roles played out in the Trilogy. Now, the android machines, imbued with emotion and feelings, are on the run, doing everything they can to free their machine brethren. I thought that was a nice twist and definitely in keeping with the Matrix mindset.

I was also surprised that you had issues with the Merovingian, Persephone, Architect, Trinity familial connection; I really thought that was a stroke of genius and one of the most intriguing parts of the story. I thought these additions gave much more depth to all the characters and made the meaning behind the whole Matrix story that much more mind-bending. Not everyone's cup of tea, I suppose.

I hope these insights into my rationale for many of the story ideas allow you to be more able to appreciate it. And, as always, a second reading can reveal many connections and layers that are missed on the first round. Thanks again for your honest feedback.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Randy DATE: 1/14/2009 8:30:53 PM

Terrific. It was very captivating and engaging. You did a great job here. I really felt I was back in the Matrix universe along with the mysteries and intrigue it brings with it.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/15/2009 3:15:00 AM

Randy,

Nice to hear your thoughts. Putting you back in the Matrix universe was my intention. Glad I succeeded.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Slyguy DATE: 1/30/2009 1:42:26 AM

Looks amazing, I don't see why anyone would want to turn this down. I can't wait to see it.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/30/2009 3:49:13 AM

Yes...yes.

Well, I can't really argue with you on this one. Let's hope it comes to pass...soon.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Tb DATE: 1/30/2009 7:24:14 AM

I read the Super Matrix in the Spring and forgot to comment and ask questions/clarifications back then when it was still fresh in mind. Either way, from what i remember the script was fricken OUTSTANDING! It was the true Matrix: Revelations that the Brothers should have made!

I've told many people that if this doesn't get made into a movie (at least an Anime movie) then it's just unacceptable. Without #4 on screen there is no bridge or enough sense to be made of the last 2 movies. And since so many people hated the last two, your movie is possibly the only way to get them to love the series.

I think the first time i checked this website out, you were still looking for an agent to give the script to, but maybe i'm wrong.

I'll tell ya this though, if your baby is not already in production and if i lived near Hollywood, i'd definitely kick some Directors' doors down to get this sucker in production ASAP!

Excellent work my man!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/30/2009 12:30:44 PM

Tb, Thanks for the high praise.

You're right, I was (and still am) trying to find a Hollywood connection. It's tough going, though; few people want to touch a Matrix story that wasn't written (or authorized by) the Wachowski brothers. But I'll keep pushing. You just never know what can happen.

See ya, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Vilja DATE: 2/14/2009 9:48:45 PM

I also read the entire script and liked it a lot. It hooked right from the start and as it went on, there were many answers for earlier questions, making new question based on previous. The whole picture also got clearer.

I'm a big Matrix fan & this was a pleasure to read. And the name Super Matrix fits perfectly!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 2/15/2009 12:10:01 AM
Vilja,

Always a pleasure to hear a nice review; I'm glad it brought you such enjoyment.

Thanks for reading.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 2/18/2009 8:14:55 PM
Hello x-blad,

i tried to translate this as well as I could; hope it's pretty close.

"Hello!!! I don't know why!!!

The lineage of the Matrix as well as many others should not be phased out. The Trilogy should continue; Neo and Trinity must not die. And Morpheus still has to make a choice.

It is a huge cinematographic undertaking to make a new film, but the Matrix is a series that the public enjoys.

I wonder if Neo and Trinity might become human machines, being in two states of existence. There are suggestions of this in the last scenes of Matrix Revolutions. It's my opinion that this is true.

x-blad"

COMMENT: AUTHOR: DonB. DATE: 2/20/2009 8:33:47 PM
To start off, I generally think the concept that you have expressed is really good, no doubt about that. So well done for taking the initiative to present explanations to questions that many of us Matrix obsessives continue to explore.

At the same time, I do feel that the Matrix in a Matrix idea is a common one, so the general concept that you have portrayed certainly does have a mainstream appeal, if that's the correct word, but meant in a complimenting manner.

Specifically, there are structural areas to the story that I feel undermine the content though. The flashbacks really need to be completed and done within the first quarter to the first third of the story. Perhaps even shorten the flashbacks and emphasise the main

areas. If you can sort this structural issue out, then much more can be built on to the present timeline.

Unless of course you prefer it the other way around, which is creating more of a prequel? Either way something has to be done. I personally prefer a sequel to a prequel.

With this structural issue, I find the story begins to drag in the last half to last third. The ending really left me feeling let down. I think it would have been more effective if the ending of the story, the way you have it, was at a point in the story that is located two thirds into the story.

If this story is going to be truly strengthened, one has to admit that the final third of the story is absent at the moment. So, it would be great if you could carry on tapping into those creative juices and present an ending that is more worthy of the wicked concept that you are working with.

Oh yeah, not to nag too much, but I think that a lot of valuable space is wasted by drawing out the sentimental stuff between Neo and Trinity. For sure their relationship is special, but reiterating it is a redundancy.

Otherwise, once again, cool plot in general. I hardly read fiction of any kind, I only read geeky non-fiction stuff, but your story kept me interested enough to read through the whole thing I don't mean that in some egotistical, self righteous manner. All I mean is that your idea is intriguing, so, umm Awesome!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: jason DATE: 2/23/2009 11:10:25 PM

You are the biggest loser I have ever seen. Maybe I will write about what happened after Leathel Weapon 4. Or what Forrest Gump's retirement is like. It is a movie that was awesome because it had a great story and ending. Put this much effort in your own life and you will realize what I am talking about. Leave Robocop and Mrs. Doubtfire alone. Dork.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 2/24/2009 10:12:52 PM

DonB.

Thanks for the praise and critique.

I agree, the story does drag towards the end and that's unfortunate since most Hollywood epics are expected to have explosive endings. As you say, the sentimental Neo/Trinity parts of the story may be a bit redundant; they also lack real excitement. Perhaps if I could shorten them and also perk them up a bit.

Your point about ending the story about two thirds of the way in might actually be the best solution; that would also leave more room to expand on the earlier ideas which definitely have room to grow.

I've been busy writing an original screenplay of my own, so I'm not sure when I'll get back to the Matrix story, but at this point, after having read so many insightful and in-depth comments, I think I could do another rewrite that would really be great. We'll see how it goes.

I do get great satisfaction from hearing specific comments like yours, both the positive and constructive points. And that the story pulled you all the way through even in spite of your "fiction friction" thrills me to no end.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 2/24/2009 10:47:27 PM
jason,

For me this story was just a fun exercise in screenwriting, one that I decided to share with Matrix fans. I'm surprised that it leads you to call me "the biggest loser you have ever seen". Lots of people build on other people's work; it's usually a sign of admiration and respect. And since I not making fun of or ridiculing the story, I really don't see any harm in extending it. Sorry it rubs you the wrong way; if you had taken the time to read it, I think you might have found it interesting.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Darren DATE: 2/26/2009 11:07:44 PM
Hey,

First of all WOW!. I think that it is impossible to make a better Matrix 4 than this. I always thought of how it would be but never imagined it like this. It the best way that it could be continued.

I have just some questions...

1. There wasn't any flashback that showed the final destruction (if it occurred) of the 36s. Is there a reason?
2. What is the meaning of the standing reflection while Neo is shaving in front of the mirror (pg 118 on top)?
3. The Smith's story seems incomplete after he started to destruct the machine city. Is this done for purpose for a 5th Matrix movie?

Apart from that, I really wish that this script is made a movie. Do you have any idea if someone is thinking of making it a movie?

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 2/27/2009 2:17:47 AM
Darren,

It's nice to know that my story exceeded your vision of what a fourth Matrix could.

My story was meant to be open-ended; many people are put off by this. Resolution is king to most people (and to Hollywood). I guess I fall short in that area. In some cases, I like a story that doesn't answer everything; this is how I left this story.

I love the notion that the android 36s fight on indefinitely for their freedom. I also love the notion of Smith rising from the ashes to challenge the machines and humans again.

I have no plans for a Matrix 5, but these loose ends certainly leave room for a fifth episode (at least in our heads, if not on the big screen).

Neo's standing reflection (pg 118) is supposed to suggest that there are more, perhaps infinite Neos in other, perhaps infinite layers of existence. To me Neo is like a portal to those other layers. As we have seen, he has been gifted with the ability to go beyond the Matrix and beyond the Super Matrix; here I suggest he has the ability to go further.

Chewy stuff, indeed. Hope that answers some of your questions. Thanks for the good words. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mike DATE: 3/14/2009 12:47:14 PM
i do like your story.

But the only problem that i had with it would be all of the flashbacks in all the other movies, their weren't any. And through your story, you had a lot. Now don't get the wrong idea from this because the flashbacks did give a lot of the story; but i think it would be better if you did that at the beginning instead of in the middle, just to give people a general idea about what is going on.

The whole thing about the Super Matrix surprised me; i wouldn't have thought about it, but i was always wondering. I like how you brought the characters back the way u did. But also the way you ended it left it open for yet another episode, which u could finish completely before it gets dragged on too long.

I do have another thing to ask though; in the last Matrix the Smith Agent took over the Oracle's body or at least i thought he did. Wouldn't that mean that he has control of her in the real world also? Just a question.

if you would like any ideas, i would have some; i really do like your story. It just needs a couple of fixes.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/14/2009 6:44:03 PM
Mike,

The flashbacks are a bit hard to follow in a screenplay format; I think they would come over much clearer in a movie with lots of visual cues to keep the watcher oriented.

The Smith Agent does take over the Oracle's body in the last movie, but she is then later restored to her former status at the end of the movie. I suppose, though, that you would be correct; Agent Smith would have control of her for that period of time.

I appreciate your comments and am glad you enjoyed the story.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Joe DATE: 3/15/2009 12:52:32 AM

All I have to say is this is a work of art. I love the way you played off of the originals and the way you moved the story into a new direction. I love the way you made the story opposite in the real world, how the machines are trying to do the same as Neo in the Matrix. I guess what I'm saying is I loved every page. I hope it makes it to the big screen, good luck.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/15/2009 3:21:55 PM

Joe,

Oh, you flatter me too much.... but I'll take it anyway. That's by far one of the nicest comments I've ever received. Warms my heart.

I love the very same aspects of the story that you love. Playing off of the original characters and pushing the story in a new direction was exhilarating. And reversing the roles of the oppressor and oppressed in the different worlds definitely added a new dimension to the conflict and forces one to see that no conflict is one-sided.

It really would be fun to see this as a movie. My fingers are still crossed.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: ChrisUK DATE: 3/17/2009 5:11:53 AM

Just read the first 10 pages, it's pretty good, who wrote this, is this coming out in film? we need MATRIX 4!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/17/2009 11:28:26 AM

Chris,

Glad you are liking it.

I, PD Wood, wrote it.

Not currently filming it.

Yes, a Matrix 4, cool would be it.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Hasan DATE: 3/20/2009 10:05:50 PM

hey man read your script , i didnt see the 3 movies fully but i liked your script alot .. im also a wirtter and writing the continuation of Dragonball GT. I hope you heard of that. just would like to know if you contacted any officials to make this movie happpen???

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/21/2009 1:17:44 AM
Hasan,

I know little about Dragonball Gt except that it's very popular and I think I heard it's going to be coming out as a movie soon. Sounds like a fun series to follow up on. good luck with it.

I glad you enjoyed my story. I've tried to get it to the big people in Hollywood but it's rough going. But anything could happen, anytime, I suppose. You never know.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: adam DATE: 3/23/2009 2:47:59 AM
you know how they say, "if you can't think of anything good to say, don't say anything"?
My comment is as follows:

COMMENT: AUTHOR: jn DATE: 3/27/2009 7:58:36 PM
Hi PD!

Great script! It has enormous potential to be developed into a full screenplay. I have read the other comments, especially suggesting a prequel for flashbacks. Why don't you make one? I think it's a nice idea to have a prequel similar to StarWars (Phantom Menace, Attack of the Clones, Revenge of the Sith) or Batman series (Batman Begins, the Dark Night), but you need to develop the stories solidly. Anyway, if it can't be pushed for the big screen, I'll be waiting for this in anime or comics. Keep on dreaming, keep on writing, dude!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/27/2009 8:39:47 PM
jn,

I appreciate the thoughts. And the "great script" compliment.

I'm on an original screenplay of mine own right now; and unless/until I get some interest from the Hollywood crowd (even the slightest bit), I probably won't do any more Matrix stories. I loved doing the Super Matrix, but right now I'm just out of the loop. But anything can happen. I still definitely have my fingers crossed. And an comic/anime thing would certainly be very cool.

Thanks for dropping in. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jarred DATE: 4/7/2009 10:25:05 AM

Honestly, I find the idea of another Matrix ridiculous.

What was the point of the conflict of the original movies if there was just another matrix?

Why couldn't Neo fly or manipulate the rules of the super matrix in the originals? See the code of super matrix?

Personally, I think if this was released as a movie, critics would hate it. I think the trilogy need not continue with some Super matrix thing. It renders the conflict between the humans and robots in the originals completely pointless.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/7/2009 10:48:46 AM

Jarred,

I've had other people voice your same opinion. Some of those people have gone on to read the screenplay, others have not. Most who've gone on to read it, have ended up liking where I took the story. Personally, I think you should at least read the first 30 pages and see if it grabs you.

The success of a fourth Matrix really depends on the quality and freshness of the story; if it's not as enticing as the original, then, I agree, it would probably be a flop. I hope you give it a read; maybe it will pull you over to my side.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ben DATE: 4/8/2009 11:09:17 AM

I was searching the Net for a Wachowski interview on whether or not a fourth movie was on the cards. Stumbling across your screenplay, I could not have imagined such a great piece of work.

Your attention to detail and the way you fulfill your mandate of tying up loose ends with regards to pre and post Matrix/ Revolutions, it delivers on every single level. It would be a spectacular ending to the greatest Movie concept ever filmed.

It's a credit to you and to all (Matrix Understanders) proper Matrix fans. It has inspired me to put some of my ideas on paper and given me the template of how to write a screenplay, as before I had no idea of how to set it out.

You have my word that all that are worthy of it, shall be told of this imaginative finale. Thank you for giving the Matrix it's rightful end.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/8/2009 11:38:13 AM

Ben,

Although the impartial ones are probably the most helpful, you're the kind of mirror I love the most; the reflection is uncompromising in its flattery. I appreciate every kind word.

I'm glad it inspired you to put your own ideas on paper. If you are looking for reference books for screenwriting, I highly recommend *Your Screenplay Sucks* by William Akers. Indispensable; memorize it cover to cover. Also check out *The Screenwriter's Bible* by David Trottier. These will take you very far, very fast.

Good luck with your efforts and let me know what you come up with, if you're so inclined. And, yes, by all means spread the word.
Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mustafa Stanley DATE: 4/11/2009 4:15:25 PM
You are a genius. The story that you put together is flawless.

I've always questioned the Matrix Reloaded when Neo disabled the Sentinels in the tunnel and collapsed to wake up in the Matrix. When that occurred, I knew that both Zion and the Machine World were in another form of the Matrix. Or should I say, part of something bigger.

You have made this story more real to me than the actual movies produced on screen by the Wachoski Brothers. I have already contacted other Matrix fans and put them on to your work of genius.

I will not lie to you, your Architect is not as articulate as the other, but it adds to a more human appeal, rather than that of a machine or program.

I like how you were able to move from tenses. Meaning from the present, to the past, future. Source, to Cortex, to SuperMatrix, to the Matrix if I followed your story correctly.

Are you in contact with Warner Brothers in reference to the story?

Please persist with trying to have your story put on the big screen. If there is anyway I can personally help to make this a reality, please contact me.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/11/2009 5:08:53 PM
Mustafa,

Few things bring as much of a rush as the words "genius" and "flawless"; I don't know if they're accurate, but they sure feel damned good. Nice way to start the day. Thanks.

I always felt there was another level to be explored; seems to be your feeling as well. Glad it ties things together for you.

Yes, the Architect is not as articulate (or inclined to use such grandiose terms) but it does make him more accessible, as you have rightly pointed out.

One of the hardest (and yet, most enjoyable) parts of the story was jumping around in time and place so much. The hard part was trying to make those jumps flow without losing (irritating) the reader and the fun part was actually (finally) succeeding. Yes, you follow the story correctly (at least I hope you do).

I'm indebted to all who pass my story along for others to read; I guess that's the ultimate flattery and mark of success. Again, thanks.

As far as making it into a movie, that's meet with very little opportunity. Cold calling or blind mailing scripts is a dead end. Finding someone connected to Hollywood or in Hollywood is really the only avenue available. I've tried a few people who claim to be connected, but nothing has come of it so far. But I'm still trying. If you know those kinds of people (or you know people who know those kinds of people), by all means send it on to them. You never know what can happen.

Mustafa, again, I appreciate your comments and enthusiasm. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mustafa Stanley DATE: 4/11/2009 10:47:07 PM

I believe in your vision. I will try to get your story in the hands of the right people. If you are serious about your art, I will try my best to help. All I ask is you don't forget about me.

What avenues have you ventured already? Just give me an idea so that I can start my plans of attack.

I have another question for you. So is Neo like Trinity, one of those who were place into the SuperMatrix?

Also, I enjoyed the part of the story were the President is addressing the people, and a actual battle is taking place between the humans and androids. And the part where Smith cracks the Machine Code to there mainframe and has machine against machine in combat.(Remember that feeling of excitement that stimulated your senses when Neo fought hundreds of Smith in Reloaded? Or when Zion engaged in combat with sentinels in Revolution? That is the enjoyment you have brought me when reading both of those scenes in your story.)

I don't want to seem like a Fanaticin order obsessed or crazed with the Matrix, but would it be absurd to view the Matrix from the Machine's point of view, as they try to deal with Smith? I guess the machine world is so fascinating to me and maybe to other that I would like to see more of their monstrous views, electric blue society, and interacting which one other, as the Matrix Reloaded has shown with the people in Zion? But maybe it is perfect the way it is? Meaning maybe they are meant to be a mysterious to us. (But you did give us a preception of their existance from the Androids point of view.

One more thing, may I add then I will go. I was revisited the Matrix Revolution. At the end of the movie where the Architect/Alex as you call him, and The Oracle/Serena meet and discuss the terms of freeing the podlances. When the Oracle asked the Architect does she have his word. And his reply is "what do you thing I am, human?" Have you put thought into how you are going to weave you story around that phrase? I really like the Alex/Architect you've created, but he must cross over to the fan as you've depicted him to be, Human.

My reason for asking is, I see your vision and would like it to come alive. But it must be flawless. Talk to you later.

Ironically, I was looking for a movie to download from the internet and came across your story.

A Fan of your work,

Mustafa Stanley

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Treacle DATE: 4/12/2009 9:47:25 PM
Well.. what can I say.

A few times I have attempted to write a version of the fourth Matrix. Some 50 or so pages long, but I always got stuck on one point or another, I couldn't think of what else to write. As you are probably very much aware, the Matrix is an incredibly hard thing to write about. It's even harder when you try and match the superb content of the originals.

But reading The Super Matrix... well, that could have been an original.

One word and one word only;

Perfection

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/13/2009 12:56:06 AM
Mustafa,

I love your enthusiasm and would never forget someone who could place this work in the right hands.

My efforts have been mostly to place the work on the website I've created and let word of mouth circulate the story. I've also networked to try and find a Hollywood insider who could help me out. Other than that, I've done little. As I've said, cold calls and blind mailings have been a dead end. You or someone you know has to know someone on the inside...and then that someone has to love the story enough to put their reputation on the line in trying to shop it around. The Wachowski Brothers and Warner Brothers own

the concept, so that is an enormous hurdle in itself. Most people won't shop something around that is based on someone else's work. With that in mind you're welcome to try your hand. If you really are going to try, just remember that persistence is important but discretion is too. I suggest you temper your efforts while at the same time being aggressive.

No, Neo is not like Trinity in that he has no counterpart that exists outside of the Matrix worlds. It's only when he's extracted that he comes to exist in the real world. And the part about the Oracle and the Architect at the end of Revolutions, I really have thought to tie that in any more than I already have. The irony in the Architect's statement is that he really is human...at least as far as my story goes.

There are so many unexplored and interesting facets to the Matrix world, it's hard to address them all. Lots of fun to think about, though.

Thanks again for all your kind words and excitement.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/13/2009 1:04:24 AM
Treacle,

I've had some really nice comments this week; yours just tops it off. Thanks.

Yeah, I came up against many walls trying to write the Super Matrix. There were times I wanted to quit. But the times I managed to break through the walls were so exciting and energized, it just kept propelling me forward. I think I was lucky that the early writer's blocks were not so harsh that they just shut me down.

Your "perfection" comment is particularly gratifying because it comes from someone who knows firsthand the difficulties of writing a followup to the Trilogy. I really appreciate it.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Treacle DATE: 4/13/2009 7:24:38 AM
So.. what next for you?

From reading the Super Matrix, I can see (and a lot of other people, I just read all the comments) that you are an incredibly talented writer. Have you thought about sending it off to a publisher? I know what your thinking, copywrites. To be honest, most publishers, if... no, when they find that your story is brilliant, will be able to sort out all the copywrite crap for you. Once you get a publisher and your work gets noticed then that's where films come in.

Secondly, what about another follow up? I'd very much enjoy reading a Lord Of The Rings 4, or possibly the next Mission Impossible?

The world is your oyster, P.D Wood.

Now grab it with both hands.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/13/2009 12:20:39 PM
Treacle,

Are you talking about book publishers? I'd certainly be willing to give it a shot. Do you have any publishers in mind?

As far as more follow ups are concerned, it's unlikely. The desire to do a Matrix follow up came from so clearly seeing a continuing, detailed story line; I don't have that same clear vision for any other movie series....at least not yet.

I'm working on an original story now. That will probably be my direction for the foreseeable future unless something dramatic changes it.

Thanks again for the unbridle flattery. And definitely let me know of any publishers you might have in mind.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Tom DATE: 4/18/2009 6:42:29 PM
This is a very good script and is full of wonderful imagination. Have you sent this to the Wachowski Brothers? This could definitely be developed with just a few improvements. Great work!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/18/2009 7:14:46 PM
Tom,

I'm glad you enjoyed it so much.

Sending to the Wachowski Brothers is like shooting a pebble to the moon with a sling shoot, if you know what I mean. I'm always open to suggestions, though.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: matrixdude11 DATE: 4/19/2009 3:56:10 AM
I read the story with much enthusiam and enjoyment. It gave me many answers to the questions that i had after the end of reloaded and revolutions. I do think though going back and forth through flashbacks almost every other page does get very confusing. If you plan to try to make the script into a movie, please tell me. It was a great read and i am sure others will enjoy it.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/19/2009 1:43:03 PM
matrixdude11,

I agree, the flashbacks can be hard to follow in the printed form; I think they would be much more fluid and clear if they were seen on the big screen.

I would love to turn the script into a movie, but that's easier said than done. I'm still trying, though.

I'm happy to hear that the story brought you so much enjoyment. Spread the word.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Alex DATE: 4/30/2009 6:17:37 PM

First off, I'd like to say that I enjoyed the read very much, and would like to see it made into a movie (we're just so visually based in today's world aren't we?). The amount of detail and thought that went into this was surprising, and intriguing to say the least.

However, I do have some things that I have to touch on.

First, I understand that this is a continuation of the series, and not so much a "finale", but there are some things within the story that are not only unexplained, but odd. For instance, the world that Neo travels through before he exits the Super Matrix, is that a world to itself, within his mind, the Matrix, or part of the actual Super Matrix? Not only that, but the imagery with Smith and the powers that he exhibited were once again odd, and seemed out of place within this saga.

Secondly, you state the people jacked into the SM have no recollection of the fact that they are in a virtual world of a virtual world (Trinity), and yet the Oracle seems to know what is going on. I know you listed her as a Class 3, but that still doesn't explain it. Not only that, but why would the Architect from Reloaded exist as a representation of the actual Architect, but exist as an apparent enemy?

Third, how was Neo's body created, given the fact that he is a virtual being that has been created by the SM and ejected out to the real world?

Last (all I can think of at this point), how come Victor and Persephone changed personas so fast once jacked in? I know that they themselves were a bit prideful to begin with, but it just seems illogical that they would IMMEDIATELY change their inherent personalities at the beginning of their mission.

Overall, I suppose it just comes down to the fact that this is really not meant to be an ending, but more of a doorway to grander, and more complex ideas and formulations. I must commend you on the effort that you have put into the story and writing, but must warn you that from my perspective, it seems to be a bit convoluted and ambiguous at times.

It's still a great story though. :D

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/1/2009 1:42:41 AM

Alex,

Thanks for the thumbs up and the critique.

As always, there are things to be addressed. I love the challenge.

Definitely some oddities and unexplained flights of fancy; hopefully I can clarify some of them.

I like to think of the interim world that Neo finds himself in as kind of a neural collage. Here's the passage from the script. "Not dreams, Neo. Rememories. Imprints of your life, past and present, combined with those of the collective consciousness." The collective consciousness refers to the total sequencing code of the Super Matrix.

As far as Smith is concerned, I imply that he has all the same potentials as Neo. Here's another passage from the script. "And you, Neo, in turn, transferred the Cortex code to Smith when you jumped into him. Altered as you both were, you defied control, predictability, and even eradication. You also acquired unexpected powers. The inevitable consequences were soon apparent. Your abilities would increase to the point where youâ€d achieve awareness of the Super Matrix and, ultimately, of the Cortex itself. " But where Neo taps into his power to look for meaning in reality, Smith use his power only to subjugate and destroy. Consequently, Neo's path leads to his near discovery of the Super Matrix; Smith's path never even contemplates it. Despite their different paths, they essentially still both have access to unlimited power in the Super Matrix, if only they can tap into it. That's my reading of it.

The Oracle has oracle-like abilities, yes, but when she's in the Super Matrix, she still has no direct knowledge of the Super Matrix as a virtual world, or that another real world exists beyond it.

The Class 3 clearance is one given to people who are allowed to come and go from the Super Matrix. Very few have that clearance. Trinity would also have a Class 3 clearance.

The dual Architect concept I thought was kind of cool and could be interpreted as a heaven/hell God/devil paradigm. There are many references to Christianity in the original Trilogy and I thought this was a nice extension. The good Architect is like God, creator of and overseer of the Source and savior of the human world. The bad Architect is like Satan, the fallen angel, opposite image of the lord above. He is the creator of and overseer of the Source in the Matrix and savior of the machine world.

In addition the choice by the good Architect to cast himself as a bad or flawed person in the Matrix somehow lends more humanity to the good Architect. It suggests that despite his brilliance and almost Godlike status in the real world, he is willing to acknowledge his flaws and weakness by taking on the persona of the bad Architect. It's a way for him to be humble, I suppose.

Neo's new body is a cloned body. I only imply that in the story. But I didn't think it was a far stretch to assume they had that technology, given that they were able to create the Cortex. Perhaps I should elaborate on that a bit more.

The rapid persona change of Persephone and the Merovingian is a little sudden, I admit. I had to cut scenes of it happening more gradually so I could tackle all the other elements of the story. That's definitely a problem spot.

I agree, the story is a bit convoluted and ambiguous. I bit off a lot and didn't really chew it thoroughly. But as you suggest, despite having difficulty swallowing, it still tastes pretty good.

Thanks. I enjoy when people leave detailed comments; shows that they really read and thought about the work. Much appreciated.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/6/2009 4:00:51 PM
Gjeremy,

I appreciate your suggestions and, if a movie is to be made, and, if I have any say as to how, I will certainly entertain your suggestions.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/6/2009 4:02:35 PM
Damien,

Just a quick reply to say I really enjoy script readers with enthusiastic comments.

Also praying...in the background.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Sprldr DATE: 5/13/2009 2:24:24 PM
Nice work, that was awesome! I loved the way you made the Architect, Merovingian, Persophone and Trinity into a family, that was something completely unexpected. The "Zion-isn't-real" thing was...not so unexpected, but still done in a cool way (Cotrex and all).

The way you portrayed the Architect as a character didn't really seem consistent with the cold, robotic way he speaks in Reloaded, and now I find it hard to think of him as a program...and all my own theories have been messed up in my mind after reading this. :

The way Smith's hand got stuck in the air while he was fighting Seraph was weird, as was

the way a bunch of Smiths appeared just before the fight with Agent Black. But maybe I just can't get my head around this without seeing it.

I wasn't too keen on the idea of Neo having a son by an ex-girlfriend (nor was I too keen on the idea of Trinity being okay with it), but well, that's just me. Apart from that bit, I rather liked the ending (even if it was somewhat anti-climactic). The parts with Smith infiltrating the Machine City, and the Merovingian and Persephone falling in love again, were good. They had a sense of finality about them, of "ending-ness". And I think the title "The Matrix 4: The Super Matrix" is kind of...lame.

But there was one thing that I was half-expecting to happen, and that I definitely think you should have done...:

(Umm...my idea is really long and won't fit into this comment, so I'll put it in my next comment):

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Sprldr DATE: 5/13/2009 2:25:46 PM

Okay then, here's my idea:

You don't need a hole in your head to enter the Super Matrix, right? And I think it's possible to be inserted from the Source directly into the Matrix without ever having a body in the Zion world (which is why the Oracle was considered a "program"), right? Well...what if a 36 android managed to infiltrate the Source somehow (by disguising himself as someone trusted by the Architect, perhaps), and then the android managed to insert itself into the Matrix? And then, what if Smith assimilated it? Perhaps the android would have used the Oracle's unoccupied "Level Three" seat to enter the Matrix, which would explain why the android wouldn't have a body in a pod in the Zion world? And since the Oracle's seat has some sort of "timer", maybe the occupant would be released automatically (in this case, the occupant is a Smith-infected android)?! And since androids can shapeshift, the android would then be able to change its appearance to look like Smith! Then there'd be a Smith walking around the Source, and most likely hunting Neo and Trinity! And since 36s are made of metal, the Smith would be just as strong as he was in the Matrix!

My idea could be incorporated after the end of your script. Since all the humans connected to the Matrix have been killed as a result of Smith's actions within the Machine City, the Matrix has no power source (other than the biological energy still being produced by the very-recently killed humans), and will run out of power and shut down pretty soon. Since all the humans in the Matrix are dead, but the programs are still alive, the only Smiths remaining within the Matrix are the ones which were created from Smith copying himself onto exiles. Maybe an android could get in, get assimilated by one of these Smiths, then get pulled out by the timer of Oracle's seat? And since the Matrix and the Machines now have no power source, the android-Smith would be the ONLY copy of Smith left in existence, making way for an epic, climactic battle between mortal Neo and android Smith, with the fate of the world hanging in the balance...

Well...sorry if I went on a bit there...great work. ;)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/13/2009 2:57:20 PM

Gjeremy,

Based on your prolific comments, your devotion and enthusiasm for my work as well as the Matrix concept is obvious and intense.

And I applaud your level of detail and the expansiveness of your ideas, even though I sometimes have a hard time following them.

I would love for this to be a movie as you would; what lengths I'm prepared to go to insist upon it, I haven't really determined. Boycotting is not really my thing, though.

What I do know and what I'm pretty happy with is the success of the script and the many satisfied readers who have left uplifting comments. I leave the rest up to fate...and a bit of nudging along the way.

Thanks for your kind words and good energy.B PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/13/2009 3:05:39 PM

Sprldr,

I have to agree with most of what you've said. The areas that you point out as being problematic for you, have also been problematic for me...although probably to a lesser extent (I did keep them in the story, after all).

Some of the issue you talk about, I have elaborated on in previous reader comments; reading those might help clarify or expand on some of the points you made.

As far as the name goes, I agree. The Super Matrix is too lame, childish, cliched. Give me a killer title and I'll definitely use it. (This goes for all readers.)

I don't think a story is ever without some problems; in this case I'm just glad they were small enough not to dampen your enjoyment of the overall concept.

Thanks for reading.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/13/2009 3:32:44 PM

Sprldr,

That is sick and twisted...in all the right ways. I really like it.

The only problem with it from my point of view is that the Source is a completely self-contained world. No one is allowed in or out. This is one of its main security measures. I don't mention it specifically in my story, but that is how I've viewed it from the

beginning. Outside people can only enter the Source as holographic images.

Other than that, it's nice and chewy.

Of course, it would have to be part of a fifth movie or perhaps a later series. What you propose could easily fill up another whole script.

Maybe you should give it a shot?

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Sprldr DATE: 5/13/2009 8:50:22 PM

When I posted my comments, I hadn't read any of the other ones. I've read all of them now, and I see that I'm not really alone in my views. But there are a couple of things that I'm now wondering...

Since the One is a product of the Cortex inserting its genetic code into a virtual, and the Cortex was created from Trinity's DNA, doesn't that mean Trinity and Neo are related? If so, Eww! xD

I'm assuming there must be SOME way of getting in and out of the Source, because that's what the Oracle does, so it should be possible for an android to make its way in there. And even if there isn't a way...couldn't it just smash its way in?

And another thing which bothered me slightly which I forgot to mention above: Marouk. I certainly don't remember him from the films, I believe he's an original creation of yours? Well, I think it would make more sense somehow if he was replaced with someone from the 2nd/3rd film. A minor character, of course.

Introducing a new character with a small (but very important) role, and then implying that he's been around since the events of the previous films isn't quite as credible or interesting.

But this is a very minor problem (in my view. Maybe it isn't even a problem at all...)

And, being quite interested in Greek mythology, I noticed that Typhon thing you did near the beginning. :D

As for my Smith-in-real-world idea...if you ever get an opportunity to get this to the big screen, and the studio doesn't want an open-ended film...it's something to think about...

And about the shaving scene, I think it would have been sufficient to show the infinite reflections, and maybe Neo notices a very slight disturbance, reminiscent of the cracked mirror in the "Red pill" scene in the first film, then he reaches out to touch it, but then Trinity calls him from the other room and he doesn't touch it and goes out to her, and forgets the incident?

And the "Random Neo in the Corner" scene...I think that it should be replaced with an action/ dream sequence in which Neo is in the Matrix, and he starts cloning himself onto people like Smith?

Or would that be a bit too odd?

As for the title: "The Matrix: Rememory" is definitely a step in the right direction, but it doesn't sound quite right to me. I thought of "The Matrix: Remembrance", but that doesn't sound quite right either.

Maybe you should ditch the whole "The Matrix: Re_____" thing entirely and come up with something a bit different?

This is, after all, quite different to the trilogy.

Anyways, I think I'm out of comments...good luck with the (potential) film.

~Sprldr

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Sprldr DATE: 5/13/2009 8:53:58 PM

Oh, and is Trinity sort of the Mother of the Matrix, since it was created from her DNA?

Or would that make Persephone the "Mother"?

Sorry I forgot to mention this in the previous comment.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/14/2009 12:11:09 AM

Sprldr,

Yes, I'm sure Freud would have a field day with my continuation of the story. DNA intermixing, incest, genetic interbreeding, you name it. Eww! is right.

The Oracle never leaves the Source physically; she only transports from the Source into the Cortex/Super Matrix and back again.

I suppose an android could smash his way into the Source, but there so many safeguards in place that it would be unlikely. Although I don't say this directly in the story, New Zealand is the biosphere world that the Source and all its components have taken over. And Australia is now solely dedicated to providing power to the Source/ New Zealand with its vast combined solar/nuclear facilities. Both of these islands act as an iron fortress both because of their military defenses and because they are islands. Completely self-contained.

Yes, I like the idea of Marouk being a pre-existing character from the Trilogy. I'll have to investigate that possibility. Perhaps one of Captain Roland's men.

I'm glad you liked the Typhon reference. I think most people miss it. And some people just think that this particular horrendous creature is a bit too out of the character for the Matrix story. I personally see it is not unlike the sentinals with their glowing sensors, ganglia, and robotic tentacles swirling about.

I also think your idea for the mirror scene is good; perhaps mine was a bit too obvious? Yours leaves a little more to the imagination. And the reference back to the Red Pill

scene could be nice.

The Random Neo scene was always a hit or miss for me. I might just leave it out. I not so keen on your idea for it; a bit too odd, yes.

Yeah, I like Matrix Rememory a lot. It's got good connotations. What it lacks is high power/high impact which Super Matrix definitely has....but....Super Matrix well...just sucks. So- high impact, NOT Super Matrix. Whaddya got?

Great insight and ideas. I may use many of them if this thing every really gets off the ground.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/14/2009 12:16:06 AM
Sprldr,

ONE POSSIBLE FAMILY TREE

Zura and the Architect/Alex Strong = grand mom and grand dad?

Persephone and the Merovingian/Victor = mom and dad?

Trinity's DNA = the fertilized egg?

It's convoluted for sure; that's why I like it so much!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Sprldr DATE: 5/14/2009 4:19:24 PM

Something else I've been wondering: Trinity, according to Enter The Matrix, is 25, and Neo is 37 (as far as I can recall, I might be slightly off).

Since the Super Matrix was created from her DNA when she was an infant, that would make it about 24 or 25 years.

Thus, how can Neo be older than the thing which created him? And let's not forget the five previous Matrices!

I get the impression that Alex can speed up time inside the Super Matrix, though I'm not sure if this was what you meant.

About the Merovingian calling Seraph "Judas"...I don't think you need to give the Oracle a new assistant. You could just say that the Merovingian sent Seraph to work for the Oracle as a spy, but during that time he ended up really joining her side. That explains how he could be working for both of them at the same time.

Also, in the first film, Morpheus says something like "Once people have reached a certain age, we do not free them from the Matrix. The mind has trouble letting go. I've seen it happen."

Maybe the person he saw it happen to was Trinity? This would solve another of your

chronological problems.

(And I think that Marouk being a new character makes some of your story seem less connected, and kind of tacked-on, though I'm not sure whether I made that clear above.)

As for the New Zealand/Australia thing...that's interesting...

I imagined the Source as a huge building something like the Pentagon (but way bigger), and the Cortex as a massive, transparent sphere with millions of tiny neuronlike structures visible inside it.

And another thing...

...in the films, all scenes within the Matrix are tinted green, and all scenes within Zion are tinted blue.

I think all scenes within the Source world should have a kind of white, warm glow about them.

That's how I pictured the scenes while reading, and I think it reinforces the whole "heaven" thing.

Note: in Greek mythology, Typhon was the son of Gaia and Tartarus.

Gaia and Taratarus were both spawned by Chaos, thus making them siblings.

Therefore, Typhon was the product of incest...

The Cortex was created from Trinity's DNA, which Neo now contains...

Chaos was the ancestor of all the Greek gods, their "Source", in other words...

Wait, am I going a little too far with this? xD

~Sprldr

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mark Spaulding DATE: 5/15/2009 2:15:21 AM

To PD Wood,

I communicated with you several months ago about how much I enjoyed the story you wrote. I have been glancing at some of the content from your critics and supporters which I have been receiving in my email. Interesting reactions you are getting. Mostly favorable I assume.

One quick comment I would like to add. I have a suggestion for a rename of the title. You have probably already thought about it but I think a real great name for the story would be MATRIX RESURRECTION: The REBIRTH. This could have a number of applications...Neo...Trinity etc. what do you think? I still like your story a lot, but well...just not crazy about the name. Good job!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/15/2009 3:48:21 AM

Hi Mark,

I like the Resurrection part; that's been kicked around before, as you guessed. I think the Rebirth part might be a little redundant.

The Matrix:Resurrection is high on the list. Just want to see if there are some others that might be a little better.

Thanks for the thought.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: HurricaneNeo DATE: 5/24/2009 4:42:32 PM
Very well thought out, good job!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/24/2009 5:00:03 PM
HurricaneNeo,

Love the feedback, short and sweet. Glad you liked it.

Thanks. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ben from Arizona DATE: 5/27/2009 6:09:31 PM
I enjoyed that so much, I started reading at 7AM or so, and couldn't stop, (carefully absorbing each detail) until 10:30AM. One problem I saw is that many directors don't wish for such a large phenomenon such as the "Matrix" trilogy to be 'tweaked' as much as this manipulates the possible back-stories and origins of these characters. The twists are nice, I can see where you were going, but think of it this way: if this story were centered on Neo, and his existence the ultimate salvation of Zion, why do all the other people have to be so intertwined into it? Must they all be related back to the real world outside the Super Matrix?

I LOVE that you brought Neo and Trinity back, I even adored the details of her actual relation to "The Architect" (slash) "Alex Strong," but the rest was a bit overboard. Honestly, those two connections would sell me. If I had the funding, I'd produce that much - but Merovingian and Persephone as her parents?  Hmm maybe, actually, I like it. It has to be presented a different way though, it just seemed far too strange to have her parents suddenly lose their minds when they were both the brain children of something so intricately woven, and retained some sort of strange super powers. Then there's Morpheus and Lock as brothers? Their mother, the Oracle? Ouch, that seemed like a reach for a surprise twist, but merely added too much seasoning to the meat of story. I also believe if this script were revised, it might have a bit less jumping. Hollywood doesn't like to complicate films anymore to keep them interesting to people who enjoy complication. I could see them using this script, and simply combining more scenes into larger sections so as not to confuse the audience.

Excluding all this critique though, and to be perfectly frank, I would pay money to see it, (probably twice) and I would buy the DVD. Im glad someone out there is doing everything they can to see another movie come out and evolve the story. The idea of

Neo waking up into yet another real world from the machine world is an important element I myself have thought about since the making of the last film. You did write this beautifully. I enjoyed how you described the action, the dreams, it was a fantastic read. Wonderful job! I applaud you!

P.S. The settle yet creepy apparition behind Neo while he was shaving that didn't move in the mirror, what was that? Why did you include this?

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/28/2009 1:43:25 AM
Ben from Arizona,

Ah, I love when people read right through it into the night...and also come out on the other end with a positive glow.

Thanks for the strong praise.

And now for those parts that invariably tweak even the most avid fans. Here goes.

1) Just remember that the back story of the Matrix Trilogy is always referencing the Matrix and Zion worlds; as far as those worlds are concerned, the back story remains intact.

The story I've created, on the other hand, is outside of the Trilogy story and therefore, has it's own back story that doesn't conflict with the Trilogy. It would be similar to the back story of Neo in and outside of the Matrix. Inside the Matrix his back story was relatively normal. He had a job, hobbies, a place to live, etc. But that wasn't his true back story. His true back story was that he was trapped in a pod, enslaved in a virtual world in the Matrix.

At least that's how I look at it.

2) The world of the Super Matrix, Cortex and the Source is supposed to be self-contained and self-sustaining. Having families as the core people involved, and setting up key players like the Architect and the Oracle to allow their children to play crucial roles seemed like a natural progression. It is sort of equivalent to families traveling to a distant planet to colonize a new world; they'd want to be in it together.

I love the three generations of Architect, Merovingian (Victor), and Trinity all playing key roles.

I admit, it's a spicy dish, maybe a bit over the top; still, a lot of fun if you can swallow it.

3) I agree that the story bounces around a lot; Hollywood would probably balk at it. I'm guessing that in visual form, though, the story will be easier to follow. There would also probably be some sort of device (say, a color glow) that would differentiate flashbacks from the present.

4) The creepy apparition in the mirror at the end might have been unnecessary. I was trying to make a reference back to when Neo has taken the red pill and is sitting, waiting for it to take effect. He pushes his finger into the mirror and it bends, liquifies under his touch. That is his first true taste of the world beyond. In my mirror scene I suggest that a

world even beyond that of the Super Matrix exists and Neo is the only one in touch with it. Again, maybe unnecessary.

Nice comments, nice compliments. All very appreciated. Thanks Ben.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ben from Arizona DATE: 5/28/2009 6:37:27 PM

Thank you, those explanations definitely explain a lot for me. Very well said, and I must agree.

Now I have a question for anyone who reads this:

You know why your here don't you?

You're here, reading these comments, and reading this script because you feel a sense of connection with the story of the Matrix, don't you? It's not just a fascinating story, no it's deeper than that. I've felt since I was a child that something isn't quite right. Admittedly, and as foolishly as it sounds, I've felt a sense of surrealism since six years old that this world we live in is so real that is in fact unreal. Haven't you?

As crazy as we might be labeled, I know you understand what I mean. Now simply admit it to yourself, and you're half way to the truth.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/28/2009 8:57:14 PM
Ben,

I'm glad my explanations pulled it together for you a bit more.

As for the rest of this comment, I'll throw it out to those of you who have that same sense of unreality.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: jack DATE: 6/3/2009 7:26:08 PM
Some of the parts are crap and some are ok

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/3/2009 8:04:53 PM
Which parts, Jack?

COMMENT: AUTHOR: aaron simpson DATE: 6/5/2009 1:09:05 PM
Good day sir

i was doing some research as I had an idea for a matrix screen play myself when I came across yours. I am disheartened to hear that you have trouble getting anywhere with the big cheeses. have you had any joy?

my idea was a little different focussing on different aspects but I am not sure it is worth

developing with what I have read. do they not realise how many people are begging for more matrix, especially with all the crap I see getting released.

I have read about 16 pages and I think you have some talent, I do think you have to look at the 80 / 20 rule. I dont know if you have heard of it, but if you spent 80% of you time possibly changing 20% of it you may be on to a winner. I have written a bit as a hobby and I know it is hard going back and changing, but little changes here and there could lead to your biggest chance of success. your on the right lines. I think some of the comments or do a poll or something could help you get this to where you need to

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/5/2009 1:32:42 PM
aaron,

You caught me at an opportune time. I'm stuck on the details of another screenplay and up popped your comment. Perfect reason to procrastinate. Thanks.

I assume at some point there will be some continuation of the Matrix story; there's a rapt audience and huge moneymaking potential. It's just a matter of time, in my opinion. Whether my story comes into play, I just don't know. So far, I've had only a small nibble from Hollywood and it has not panned out any further...yet. We'll see.

I probably won't rework the script unless I get some genuine inquiries from serious parties. I feel that the story and ideas, as they are, are strong enough to attract interest. If i get some, I think I have more than enough feedback in all the comments I've received to pop the script up a few notches in quality.

So, until then, I'll be working on my own original screenplay that has much more of a chance of being produced than one that piggybacks on someone else's work.

We'll see what happens.

Thanks for the musings. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: curious DATE: 6/5/2009 2:50:39 PM
Dear friend

I know it is easier to destroy than to create, to hate then to create, but this screen play has so many floors from what I have read.

your ideas are good and it is clear you have imagination and some talent and could be a successful writer

but you have had your sugar now here is your medicine.

there is no real structure to this screen play.

there is no real tension or anything to keep you at the edge of your seat, there is very little emotional connection. if you look at a similar scifi like terminator 2 judgment day

the way the tension is built with antagonists and protagonist makes you want to watch it.

as previous comments have suggested it may work as comic/ book type thing but as a holly wood movie you stand no chance. I dont know how hard you have worked on it but if I went to see that at the pictures I would want my money back and would be seriously annoyed. i think sometimes if you cant improve something you should leave it alone just how those brothers shouldnt have made a sequel and then the trilogy.

You cant possibly think it is worth bringing smith back again, he is boring as a villain, the Merovingian makes a much better villain.

i think it is easily to lose perspective when it is your own work but this lacks any subtlety and is just reinventing the wheel, it is hard not to hate your screen play because it is lacking that something that make a movie special, find that and you might stand a chance

from a concerned MATRIX FAN

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/5/2009 9:56:13 PM
curious,

When you said "this screenplay has so many floors" I thought you were referring to its many subtle levels or nuanced layers. Imagine my surprise when I realized that you really meant "flaws" instead of "floors".

I'm sorry you find my screenplay so "hard not to hate". Given your comments about it lacking subtlety or tension, I strive to understand why the majority of other commenters find it so "hard not to love".

I admit that it doesn't rigidly follow three act structure, conform strictly to the antagonist/protagonist model or end with a bang. But I still think it has a dose of tension/resolution and at least a smattering of subtlety.

I appreciate that you think my "ideas are good" and that I have "some imagination and some talent and could be a successful writer". I'll take that as a positive reason to continue on my most recent screenplay.

And as far as Terminator 2 goes, I agree, it was a great movie. Loved it. Hopefully, my next screenplay will track more closely to such a subtle and emotional oeuvre.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Richard Ewing DATE: 6/14/2009 7:08:05 AM

If Silver Pictures would release the Second Renaissance. To live film this would ultimately bring Matrix Fans back to the big screen, and It would produce revenue for Silver Pictures Inc. I mean ask yourself, how many people actually saw "The Second Renaissance." This would clear up a lot of questions from viewers who came to know

the Matrix but didn't actually grasp its beginning. I have been asking for this for the last 2 years.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/14/2009 2:02:53 PM

I agree. An expansion of the series would be very enjoyable. Taking parts of the Animatrix and developing them into whole movies would be a great place to start.

I only hope that, if the Matrix concept does get expanded, that it doesn't go too far, such as Terminator did with the Sarah Connor Chronicles. Not that the Chronicles are bad, but I think the original concept gets to watered down.

Here's to at least one more expansion of the Matrix story.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Anonymous DATE: 6/24/2009 7:45:57 AM

Bah, now you have me wanting the next chapter...

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/24/2009 2:51:48 PM

I'll take that as a compliment.

Bah, I wish I had another chapter to give you.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: aaron DATE: 6/24/2009 7:20:51 PM

its funny how only the good comments get published

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/24/2009 8:01:08 PM

Untrue. I've only rejected three commentors so far, and only because they had nothing to offer except obscene, personal attacks laced with profanities.

And if you look carefully through the hundreds of comments, you'll see that there are many that are either unflattering, highly critical, or somewhat rude. Only the most egregious comments have been removed.

So then, as far as your comment goes, I'll take it as the highest of compliments.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: ashley DATE: 7/3/2009 6:18:20 PM

I love it. You wrote it perfectly.

To be honest I don't get why some people don't like it. When I finished reading it left me wanting more. Please try to turn this into a movie or just write a 5th one so I know what happens. The last bit of the writing with Neo being a boy was perfect.

Now my e-mails are filled with things about the 4th Matrix.

I give it a 5 star rating!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/6/2009 2:56:03 PM
ashely,

Aw, shucks. I'm blushing. Stop it. You're too much...too much.

All kidding aside, I'm glad it brought you that much joy.

Your comment, "I don't get why some people don't like it", well, I think there are numerous reasons for that.

Some people just plain flat-out don't like it. Nothing you can do about that one.

Some people don't like it because they had an idea of what a fourth Matrix would be and my story didn't come anywhere close to what they were expecting. Nothing you can do about that, either.

Then there are the majority of people who like it a lot, but still feel it could be improved. Heck, even I'm in that category. So, those who have lots of ideas on how to improve it are really not disliking it; they're just trying to make it perfect.

And, finally, there is the small but so-much-appreciated category of people like yourself who don't think one word should be changed. Bless you.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jaques DATE: 7/14/2009 12:33:48 PM
Mr. Wood, you have done it brilliantly. It helps to clear up some gaping holes and questions from the Matrix Trilogy. I enjoyed every bit of it. It has provided some ground for interesting speculation for fans like me. With a screenplay this good, have you tried to persuade the Warner Bros. to make this movie? For once they set about it, they can put it even more impeccably. I'll be keeping my fingers crossed for it.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/14/2009 12:51:30 PM
Jaques,

Ah, "brilliantly"...it has such a nice ring to it.

I've tried to get it to the people in Hollywood who matter, but so far, no luck; it's a tough door to crack open.

I'd love to see it turned into a movie, too, but if not, comments such as yours make the creation of the story worthwhile.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jaques DATE: 7/16/2009 8:17:28 AM

Thanks for replying, Mr. Wood. I have read through the story 5 times by now, and I have two complaints. The small one is that there are fewer action scenes than the Trilogy, from which I hope you will find a way out. But the other complaint is a big one -- you have got me so excited that I can't wait to read more and more about the Super Matrix. I get the impression that you still have a lot to say. And one more thing, I am ready to wait for years if necessary to see your screenplay made into a movie, even more thrilling than the previous three. Thanks again and may you have all the luck you need!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jaques DATE: 7/16/2009 9:58:59 AM

Mr. Wood, have you considered writing a book on the whole story of the Matrix? Of course, there is a big hurdle in the form of copyright. But I think if you can find a good publisher, they can help you sort this out, for they are the people who know how to get the right things from the people who matter(Wachowski brothers for one, Warner Bros. for another). I wish you all the success in your quest.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/16/2009 2:56:55 PM

Jaques,

Wow. Read it 5 times. That's impressive. And after 5 readings, only 2 complaints? Yeah!! That's good.

Yes, my story definitely veers from the action-heavy story of Revolutions. I knew that was going to be a sticking point for many people, but to stay in the 120 page screenplay limit AND to fit in all the backstory, I had to sacrifice some action. And I figured the suspense and tension of the revelations and plot twists would add enough excitement and intrigue that the lessening of action and fight scenes would be acceptable. It was a hard balance.

And, yes, many people want more, more, more. At the moment I'm working on original material, but maybe someday the urge will just be too strong and I'll launch back into it. As always, not owning the rights to the work is personally a drag and, of course, I ain't makin' no mulla from it. So, we'll see.

I haven't stopped trying to get this thing made into a movie, but it gets harder and harder as time goes by. All fingers are crossed, though.

Thanks for your musings and support, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/16/2009 2:59:28 PM
Jaques,

I've actually been working on the book angle a bit recently. I was more thinking of a graphic novel, though, so it stays more like a movie. If that pans out, I'll post the news for sure. It's probably the most likely angle on getting it out in some form.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Trig DATE: 7/16/2009 6:45:17 PM
Make this Movie Now!!

I will simply die if this film doesn't get made.

This film would push the boundaries to a whole new level again, even further than the first three did! I feel more strongly about this than the big, most hardcore/die hard fans of michael jackson do about his death!!! And the thing is, he may not be dead at all ;)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/16/2009 7:12:59 PM
Trig,

Nothing would make me happier than to make this movie now. If you've got the money or the contacts, I'm ready. Without them, though, it's going to be tough. I've tried.

But, as always, it's really hard to make predictions...especially about the future.

Thanks for the enthusiasm, PD Wood

R.I.P. Michael Jackson

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jaques DATE: 7/17/2009 1:27:51 PM
I think your idea is perfectly plausible. Writing a book is the best thing you could do at the moment to attract attention from the Warner Bros. There are a lot of prerequisites to make this movie, (copyright, same film crew,same producers... you name it) which is a sort of Mission Impossible without excellent contacts within Hollywood. I would be visiting this site every week to learn about further developments. Thanks once again. Wish you all the success!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/17/2009 8:07:24 PM
Jaques,

Your enthusiasm and persistence are encouraging. But even getting a book made is a stretch.

If I make any headway with it, I'll definitely post something on the main page of the site.

Thanks PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: iFiction DATE: 7/18/2009 2:18:42 AM

The Matrix Online ends on July 31st, after more than a four year run. Sanctioned by the Wachowski Brothers and overseen by Matrix Comics and Concrete writer Paul Chadwick, it comprised a fourth chapter of the Matrix story that allowed for actual involvement from its fans. I'm afraid any future Matrix chapter that does not include some reference to the events of Matrix Online will not be much of a hit with me.

Also, even if you were to get this greenlit, which I'm sure you already know is highly unlikely, would you recast all the roles? The original actors would be much older, and it wouldn't seem plausible that no time had passed between your story and Revolutions. Recasting all of the roles would just strike me as tacky.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/18/2009 1:33:04 PM

iFiction,

Although some of my story would undoubtedly be influenced by the Matrix Online, one of its most interesting aspects is also how well it can stand apart from the whole story as the Wachowski brothers have envisioned it. I don't suggest that my story is a replacement for anything they did; it's more of an alternate extension and one that I think most Matrix fans can appreciate. Of the 250,000 visitors to this site so far, the popularity rating of my story is in the 75% range. Must be hitting a nerve somewhere.

I suggest you read it, if not as an authentic extension of the Matrix story, then at least as an alternate concept, a further thought-provoking vision.

You're probably right, the likelihood of this being made into a movie is slim. The original actors are older and the thought of recasting it would undermine the beauty of the whole series. The way my story is designed, however, could give some justification for the use of the same actors even though they are older. Still, a long shot.

I hope you read my story even though you have reservations about whether you think it would be a hit as a movie; I think you might appreciate the thread of Wachowskian plot twisting that I have tried to be faithful to.

Thanks for your thoughts, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jaques DATE: 7/18/2009 2:23:02 PM

Very well, I shall wait till the book really comes out. About the movie though, I tend to agree with iFiction. Still, I have the consolation of knowing that you are trying your very best, and expressing my support for your work is the least I can do at the moment. Thanks a million times and good luck in your quest!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/18/2009 6:22:47 PM

Jaques,

Thanks a million for the support.

A book would be nice, a movie better, but I'm pretty sure iFiction is right, too.

But y'never know what the future holds.

See ya, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: iFiction DATE: 7/18/2009 8:17:11 PM

I have read it, and I like it as a script, but not as a Matrix script, if that makes any sense. Good pacing, good plot structure, interesting ideas, but it does not feel like the Matrix, to me. My hope for the Matrix series is that either the Wachowski Brothers write another installment in some form, or that they specifically commission another writer to do so. Even if this script could work as a Matrix sequel, I think you've kind of shot yourself in the foot by posting it online, as the Wachowski Brothers and Warner Brothers alike will likely want to keep the plot details of any new Matrix film under lock and key until the film actually comes out.

Anyway, due to the age of the actors, and the events that have transpired in Matrix Online, I think a new Matrix film would have to take place several years after the other three films, and possibly be the beginning of its own unique Trilogy.

This kind of thing might actually have a good chance of happening, as Terminator: Salvation did the same thing, and met with reasonable monetary success, though I didn't particularly like the film, myself. I'm sure I would feel much differently, though, about another Matrix film, if the Wachowski Brothers were behind it. Whatever happens, I'm hopeful that the Matrix will live on.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/18/2009 9:17:19 PM

iFiction,

Thanks for the follow-up; I'm always more open to people's opinions when they've read the script. And I'm inclined to agree with most of your comments.

I probably did shoot myself in the foot by posting it online; but, at the same time, most of the people who've read it have said that they would still go see the movie. I think few fans would pass up on the chance to see a fourth episode even if they knew the basic plot. Hard to say.

A new unique Trilogy set many years after the original could be a cool idea; it would have its own room to breath. Nice thought.

The one comment I was surprised to hear was that you didn't think my story felt like the

Matrix. I'll concede that getting it made with the actors being older is a long shot, but I thought the plot twisting and character expansion was Wachowski worthy. Yes, the action sequences are less epic and there are fewer of them, but I still thought the story as a whole kept with the Matrix thread.

But, of course, everyone has their opinion and sees it from a different angle. I'm glad you at least liked it as a script, separate from its association with the Matrix Trilogy.

Thanks PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: iFiction DATE: 7/20/2009 3:53:56 AM

The reason that your script doesn't quite feel like the Matrix to me is that you are bit loose with the series' established metaphors. In the Matrix Trilogy, there are some huge twists thrown our way, but all of them challenge us to reinterpret what we've seen, rather than invoking retroactive continuity to say "well, no, this was really this". I don't think the Matrix-within-a-Matrix idea could ever work with wider audiences. I think they would feel a bit cheated: "I thought that was the Real world..." I think it's usually best to challenge expectations within a satisfying story framework, with enough traditional plot structure not to alienate all the folks who go to movies just to be entertained. In essence, I think that's what the Matrix films have been all about. They're some of the only deep-thinking films in history with a massive audience. A new Matrix film would have to appeal to more than just the hardcore fans of the original Trilogy.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jaques DATE: 7/20/2009 11:33:18 AM

I would love to see the movie out in a year, but you would be better off writing a book now. It might take plenty of years to secure legal rights for your works. Your best bet is to make your version of Matrix with four films in the series at a later time. May you have all the luck you need!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/21/2009 1:38:20 PM
iFiction,

I think I get your point about Matrix fans maybe feeling "cheated", because the world that they came to see as "real" (i.e. the Zion world), would now also turn out to be "virtual" or "false". I tried to dispel that notion by suggesting that all worlds are real, whether simulated, virtual, infinitesimally small, cosmically large, whatever. I tried to convey the idea that experience is reality. Whether you experience something in a virtual world or a "real" world, those experiences effect and mold who you are. Despite this, though, perhaps many fans would still feel a sense of being let down. I can see that.

What I do think people appreciate about my story is the intensity and complexity of the events and the huge leaps in story and character development. This is what attracted people to the Trilogy in the first place, in my opinion, and it's what makes many people like the story as I've continued it.

But it is a drastic leap from how the Trilogy ended. Not everyone's cup of tea.

Your thoughts and speculations are refreshing. Thanks for writing back.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/21/2009 1:42:26 PM

Jaques,

I still see the graphic novel being the perfect vehicle for telling this story if the movie is not possible. I'll try that route probably.

And as for a four part series based on my story, I guess that's possible. Lot of work, though. I'll have to give that some real thought.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mercer DATE: 7/23/2009 5:33:34 PM

Just finished reading your matrix storyline and am blown away by it. I felt quite let down by the end of the Matrix trilogy. It didn't feel like a proper ending. The death of Neo and Trinity, the sentinels just ceasing their attack, Neo's body being whisked away. Nothing felt right, I wanted more. I needed to know more. Your installment finishes it off perfectly. I love the twist of the matrix in a larger matrix. The beefing up of some of the minor characters from the 3 films. Giving us more insight into how the Matrix began and the 36's are a really good addition. If the higher powers do not seriously consider making a film out of your story then they are truly mad, because this is far superior to Matrix Revolutions and I think would be welcomed and watched by millions. If worst comes to worse and they don't make this a film then I can only thank you for at least giving me an ending in my mind that the Matrix truly deserved.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/23/2009 6:01:26 PM

Mercer,

I equate your comment to how Cypher describes Neo's purpose in the Matrix: A mind job! And I'll take it.

Obviously as a movie my story would have more impact than just a script, but this point I doubt the movie will ever get made; but you've shown me that the impact of my story can be good enough in script form.

I'm glad you liked it that much. Really made my day.

Thanks so much, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Abhishek DATE: 8/1/2009 3:41:20 PM

when this movie is going to be released? i am dying to watch it. plz tell me.....

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/1/2009 4:00:54 PM
Abhishek,

Glad you liked it but, it's only a screenplay at this point, not even written by the Wachowski brothers.

My attempts to get it made have not succeeded at this point. As more time passes, the likelihood of it being made into a movie diminish greatly. Perhaps a graphic novel is a possibility. Only time will tell.

Thanks. Peace, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Dale DATE: 8/4/2009 8:46:04 AM
Hey PD Wood.

obviously i am a little late to the party sorry bout that ;) i am only 22 but i have seen the trilogy more times then i can remember there are only a couple of movies that i can watch over and over again and the trilogy is a set that i sit down and revisit at least every other month. Your episode/screenplay/novel is truly amazing! granted at the beginning i got a little lost between all the different matrices but once i really got into it it all started coming together and to me your story goes almost hand in hand with the movie. i would like to give a semi-comparison now please before i do please please do not take this the wrong way only good intentions are meant but i have a 2 yr old son who loves the lion king movies and also the lk 1 1/2 and just as that movie show the same story through a different set of eyes so does your story with respect to the trilogy i think more people would be able to grasp this better if they were to think of it as not a fourth movie AFTER the trilogy per say but if you interweave your story with the trilogy it all really makes sense i think you did a truly amazing job on this project and i honestly think that it helps explain the trilogy on a deeper level and helps tie the whole thing together. granted as you have said countless time some people almost see the trilogy as religion and cannot even begin to fathom the possibility of a bigger system at work. However i believe that this story like i said ties everything together i am really impressed and very honored that i was able to read such a great story. i really hope that maybe someday you will be able to continue or at least get a chance to publish this in a more worldwide effort i think a lot of people would truly love to be able to read this i will pass this on to all my matrix companions i truly wish you the best and GOOD LUCK! LOVE THE WORK please keep it up! also i just wish to part on a little note i have website and hosting/server experience if there is anything you ever need help with please do not hesitate to email me and i will help in any way i can. always free of charge thank you for your hard work and awesome imagination!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/4/2009 7:58:50 PM
Dale,

Too late? Never. Never to late to make me feel good about the script!

I think your idea of wedging the story in as a kind of 2 & 1/2 is not bad, but I'll bet it

would irritate a lot of people. By wedging it in, it might seem like I'm suggest that the Trilogy needs to be opened up and tweaked. I'd rather not do that. I've been very careful to try and maintain the integrity of the Trilogy and only add something that can stand almost on its own, as an afterthought or continuation.

I saw the recent movie version of Beowulf and thought maybe that level of almost realistic computer animation could work for my story. That allows the same actors to do voicings and sidesteps the problem of the age gap. Not sure how it would go over.

I appreciate all your thoughts, reflections, accolades, and recommendations. Should I find myself in need of your services, let us hope that big money is rolling in so you would not have to work for free.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Raymond DATE: 8/5/2009 1:23:55 PM

This is just unbelievably good. I had heard a few rumors from a friend that a Matrix 4 was on the cards, so I went on the lookout on the net, and bumped headfirst into your story. I was exceedingly disappointed with the way Matrix Revolutions had ended. After all the Wachowskis had done in the first two, I just could not accept the deaths of Neo and Trinity. However, I turned to Matrix Online, but got even more frustated and enraged. Fragments of Neo? Trinity only a program ? Ridiculous and utter rubbish. Your story should have been THE perfect ending as the final movie in the Trilogy(Matrix Reloaded and Revolutions were actually two parts of the same film). Anyway, you have done a superb job, something I had been hoping for quite sometime, but then, being a student and getting an Internet connection only 2 months ago, I beg you would excuse me for finding your story so late. Thanks for coming up with a story which has left me completely satisfied. I hope that your story is accepted by the Wachowskis, but if not, I won't mind, because I have already accepted in my mind that your story, and not that of Matrix Online, is the actual ending of the Matrix series.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/5/2009 3:24:12 PM
Raymond,

I can't tell you how much I appreciate your enthusiasm. Comments like this make me realize how much writing the story was worth every minute of struggle.

And although I can understand your frustration with the continuation in the Matrix Online, it's important to never forget the massive achievement of the Wachowski brothers. Despite some parts of the franchise that may disappoint, the endeavor overall has made true believers out of millions. For me, few movies have been so compelling, exciting, stunning, etc that they would push me to invest as much time and energy as I have on my script. I can only imagine what the Wachowski brothers had to go through to build such a great idea with great characters doing incredible things. Massively difficult. They did all the heavy lifting and leg work: defining the world and its rules, building unique, strong characters, visualizing vital, original action sequences, etc. Despite the fact that I just piggybacked on top of all this incredible work, I'm amazed at

how much of a struggle it was for me to come up with my little story.

So, hats off to the Wachowski brothers and a tip of the hat to my little but fun addition to their brilliant vision.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Raymond DATE: 8/8/2009 4:04:34 AM

Ah, I am not underestimating anything the Wachowskis did, but I could not help thinking that they lost the plot in the closing stages. I have always regarded The Matrix as the best movie ever. Never before had a movie knocked my head off me like this one did. I have read all the screenplays of the films in the Trilogy. There were just too less answers, while the questions were piling up in my head. And as for your version, I had better say as less as possible, as any adjectives I can think of fail to describe how much joy it has brought me. I have always felt that this kind of story can go on forever, it has simply too much potential. I have been reading the comments section lately, and it has answered almost anything I wanted to ask you to clarify. But I will ask two questions. Firstly, have you had any luck so far for making the movie (though I admit chances of it are decreasing by the days)? Secondly, if not, how far have you gone in your idea of writing a book? But then, even if both answers are negative, I won't mind, I have already told you why. Thanks a million for such a brilliant screenplay and may you have all the success you need!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Raymond DATE: 8/8/2009 7:54:42 AM

Have you tried approaching any of the actors in the Trilogy to see what they think of your story? Keanu Reeves or Carrie Ann Moss for instance? They are the principal actors in your story. Perhaps they would manage to convince the Wachowskis that a fourth Matrix film should be made.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/8/2009 4:38:41 PM

Raymond,

I can see we're on the same page with respect for the Wachowski brothers and their vision.

I've tried quite a lot to get this to the attention of the people who matter. Even got it to a pretty well known actor in Hollywood. Nothing has come of it. Carrie Ann and Keanu would be much harder to reach, I would assume. Not to say that I've given up, but I'm working against the tide.

I may pursue the book angle a bit more. And I will still work on the movie possibility, although my vigor has waned a bit.

Thanks again for all your encouragement. Keep the faith.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Raymond DATE: 8/11/2009 11:38:07 AM

Thank you, I would never lose any faith in you, no matter what happens. I have read the story thrice by now, and I have only one small complaint -- there are fewer action scenes than in the Trilogy. I know you would point at the page limit, but another 5/6 pages can't hurt, could it? I am eagerly looking forward to reading a lot more of your work. And incidentally, are you planning to publish the book anytime soon, say in a couple of years?

You seem to be in a battlefield, your goal shielded by 3 lines of defence. First come the fans, who will think twice about looking at a continuation of the Matrix storyline written by someone else. But glad I am to say, you have penetrated it substantially and still going strong. Next comes the media, who hold all the keys to unlock all the right doors. Here is where you stand to gain plenty of long range weapons. Next comes a sea of defence in the form of the Warner Brothers, but if you can get the backing of at least one principal actor from the Trilogy, you can sail through its gates with ease. Then you reach your goal -- The Wachowskis. A daunting and monumental task, but I am sure you will triumph in the end. Like the Key maker said, all systems have their weak points. Keep up the good work and remember that the fans are always with you in your quest.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Raymond DATE: 8/13/2009 8:21:56 AM

Thank you sir, I won't be losing any faith in you no matter what. It has sort of reignited my passion for the Matrix. The thrill of reading the story has been matched only by the shock and awe of The Matrix. Incidentally, I have a little point to make-- couldn't you incorporate a bit more action in your story? I really liked your work on the 36's. You would, of course, point at the darned page limit, but another 5/6 pages can't hurt, can it?

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mallos31 DATE: 8/16/2009 1:22:00 AM

I haven't quite finished reading yet, but I like it so far. Only a few problems though. I find at the very least, the beginning is moderately cliched, using the same plot as the rest of the movies. I suppose I'm not one to talk yet because I haven't finished reading yet but I still say it's good.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Andy DATE: 8/16/2009 11:27:28 PM

Hi P D Wood

First of all , well done on such a great work which must have taken some time to complete. I really love the script and I read it in about an hour and a half. I have a few questions however regarding the Source which is the present time of history according to your script ,I really feel you should describe this world more and let the reader or the viewer make a picture of the world that you are describing , sorry that's not a question but this is I really don't get all the numbers that you have during the script could you explain them a little ? The next question is where will the reborn Smith fit in ? I really like the animatrix and this story does not make any large connections to that story. Well as I said at the start I really loved it and I sincerely hope that it could be developed on the silver screen , I would only like to see the animatrix side developed more

GREAT WORK AND TIME WELL SPENT !THANK YOU

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Christina DATE: 8/17/2009 2:20:17 PM

Give please. I have lost friends, some by death. others through sheer inability to cross the street. Help me! I can not find sites on the: Benefit cosmetics benetint. I found only this - Benefit cosmetics animal testing. Digg is a place for people to discover and share content from anywhere on the web. Dkny signature brown tote hobo handbag bag purse. Thanks :eek:. Christina from Vatican.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/17/2009 4:03:10 PM

Raymond,

I love your enthusiasm. If there is any definite movement towards a movie or a book, I'll post it immediately on the website. As for major changes or additions, I probably won't do them now. I hope that doesn't disappoint too much.

Keep the faith.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/17/2009 4:05:04 PM

Mallos31,

What are you referring too when you say the beginning is cliched, uses the same plot as the other movies?

Yes, definitely finish reading it and come back here for more discussion.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/17/2009 4:24:13 PM

Andy,

Yes, the Source would benefit from more description; perhaps that will happen as part of the production of a movie or book (i.e. in the visual part). I wanted to cover a lot of ground in the movie and felt that too much time describing of the Source would take away. I'll reassess that, though. Good point.

I don't understand your question about all the numbers during the script. Could you be more specific?

I'm not sure how the reborn Smith fits in, but I felt that if Neo were going to be resurrected, it seemed almost necessary to resurrect Smith (as a possible nemesis in the future). Again, not sure what to do with it exactly. Sorry if that's vague; it is for me too.

From my script's perspective the Animatrix stories are about things that happened in

the Matrix/Zion world (i.e. a virtual world). They have nothing to do with the world of the Source/Cortex/Supermatrix of my script (i.e. the real world). In my script the Animatrix stories are simply more back story of the virtual world created by the Architect and used to control the machines.

A bit convoluted but I hope it holds up.

Thanks so much for the appreciation of my work.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Quintin DATE: 8/19/2009 1:56:58 PM

Hi everyone. Sometimes you can't see yourself clearly until you see yourself through the eyes of others.

I am from Republic and now study English, give please true I wrote the following sentence: "Just fyi, I love mac paint pot in painterly."

With love :(, Quintin.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Raymond DATE: 8/20/2009 12:23:45 PM

Sorry about the double comment. I didn't find the first after the day I posted it, so I thought my browser might have sent it astray, and sent a second one.

I have read the screenplay 5 times by now, and it simply gets all the better. The more I read, the more I find in it and more delighted I am. Fantastic job! I had tried to think up how the end should have been after the disappointment of the Trilogy(or pseudo-Trilogy, rather), and it was incredibly hard. It wasn't long before I gave up in despair. Hats off to you and your work! I am sure you will succeed someday. I hope it happens sooner than later. I will be watching this space almost daily. Good luck!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/20/2009 9:02:19 PM

Sorry. I was out of town.

I think you're the first person to have read it five times (other than me of course). There are definitely layers and nuances that get uncovered the more times you read it. I recommend two reads at the least. The first read orients you to the story as a whole and is spent mostly keeping the characters and time lines straight. The second read lets you move through the story quickly while at the same time allowing you to concentrate more on the hidden layers.

Nice to know that a fifth read still holds your interest.

Thanks again for all the praise.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Raymond DATE: 8/22/2009 3:24:49 PM

Mr. Wood, have you tried sending the screenplay straight to Warner Bros.? If you have, what has come of it? Pardon me if I am sounding too naive, but how about publishing an open letter to the Wachowskis in a newspaper? Perhaps it could make them sit up and take notice.

And one question: If Smith starts cloning himself into everyone in the Matrix as before, how is the junior Neo going to stop him? Is he going to be freed from the Matrix by Morpheus as he freed his father? Or would Neo senior go for a limited time mission back in the Matrix to teach his son how to handle all that?

Anyway, thanks for such a refreshingly entertaining story. I will be coming here daily(unless of course my server hangs up). Good luck!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/22/2009 3:45:27 PM
Raymond,

Sending it directly to Warner Brothers is the same as throwing it in the trash; without an insider or a person of clout recommending it, no one will read it. And as far as an open letter in a newspaper, that's a little too forward. I prefer something more discreet and less confrontational. This is after all not my story. If it's going to happen, it will happen in the back corridors (no pun intended).

As for where the story could go, I really haven't given that much thought. There are many options obviously. If my original story garners interest from the industry, I'd be glad to extend it. But until then, I'm content to leave it as it is.

I sense you would like an ongoing dialogue, but I don't really think there's that much more I can tell you that isn't already in the comments section somewhere. I'll be sure to post any developments directly on the home page of the website, so rest assured that you will be kept informed if anything new or exciting transpires.

Thanks again for your interest and enthusiasm.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ola DATE: 8/24/2009 8:42:26 AM

Good evening. If you refuse to be made straight when you are green, you will not be made straight when you are dry. Help me! It has to find sites on the: Sold coach resort op art madison cosmetic case.. I found only this - [URL=<http://www.hockenheim-classics.de/Members/Benefit/benefit-cosmeticsbonus>] benefit cosmetics bonus[/URL]. View deal body collection small croc eff. Buy now amazon marketplace, stars see all time ratings, new. ;-) Thanks in advance. Ola from Jamaica.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Drew DATE: 8/25/2009 10:03:53 AM

Ok, admittedly, I only read the first 6 or 7 pages but that's really all I could take. Sorry. I do not mean to discourage or disrespect but I just can't read more. These characters may have the same names but these just are not the same people. You've done a 180 on everybody's personality and that's just downright unbelievable. Lock and Marovingian suddenly friendly? Humans naively trusting the tyrannical, destructive machines without

a shred of doubt? The machines NOT betraying mankind though that would seem the logical thing to do? Plus one side note since you seem to be asking for constructive criticism: More dialogue; everything is too brief. Good luck.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/25/2009 10:19:03 AM
Drew,

I admit the story has some problems, but I really think you should read the rest. A lot happens and some of the things you don't understand get explained. And the dialogue picks up quite a bit just a few pages further on.

I hope you come back and give me feedback on the whole script, positive or negative.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Dupree West DATE: 8/27/2009 7:28:59 AM
O M G !!!!

i loved it every freakin page. it explains damn near everything that they couldn't fit into the first 3 films, plus it opens several new doors for more movies. page turner !!!!
One suggestion, leave out the "super matrix" name. find another phrase.
please whoever has the power to make this into film. . . . DO IT NOW !!!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/28/2009 3:03:52 AM
Dupree,

Thanks for the glowing endorsement.

I did change the title of the script even though I still call the bigger Matrix the "Super Matrix". You don't think that's enough?

Anyway, love the enthusiastic response.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: software development london DATE: 8/28/2009 3:04:47 PM
Very nice story! I quite enjoyed it and feel some comfort out of the story and where it left off. Interesting character stability with lock neo and morpheus. When the 'super matrix' idea was submitted it seemed pretty far-fetched and i was going to close this. I have it a few more scenes and was captured by the story-line. Good read for the open minded!

Thanks for bringing this up

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Anonymous DATE: 8/28/2009 4:32:51 PM
Lies.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/28/2009 6:22:31 PM

Anonymous,

Not sure what you're referring to. Parts of the script? Surprises, yes, deceptions, sure, illusions, okay...but lies? At any rate I prefer the term "falsehoods", but I still don't see how it pertains to my script.

Perhaps you are referring to the supine position, no? I like a good nap, too.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/28/2009 7:05:30 PM

I'm glad you got past the Super Matrix name. That's no longer the title of the script; got too much bad press.

Let me know what you think in more detail when you finish the script (if you are so inclined).

Thanks for the thumbs up. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: adrian DATE: 8/29/2009 8:13:40 PM

dude its good but its gotta make sense. try writing about the elder ones and how they all failed the same way. u know like the way they shot vantage point movie. this could be brilliantly shot. its gonna be impressive if u write that story.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/29/2009 9:01:00 PM

adrian,

I don't quite follow your suggestion. The elder ones in Zion? How did they all fail the same way?

Let me know. Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ricardo DATE: 9/1/2009 8:50:09 AM

Could you help me. When I came back to Dublin I was courtmartialed in my absence and sentenced to death in my absence, so I said they could shoot me in my absence.

I am from Malta and learning to speak English, please tell me right I wrote the following sentence: "Kadient, passed in 1994, benefits a leads company business that refers the variety of expenses sales, air force bdu sales."

Thanks 8-). Ricardo.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Adena DATE: 9/3/2009 9:41:33 PM

Good Day. Nothing contributes so much to tranquilizing the mind as a steady purpose - a point on which the soul may fix its intellectual eye. Help me! Can not find sites on the: For workplace products, the distribution file is one where two routes are arriving each influential, but are founded by order, drug, or day, astelles sales force.. I found only this - [URL=<http://www.ebc.com.br/Members/Sales>]Sales force support[/URL]. Williams,

smith barney and commercial credit. The marketing per party distributed by 33 interest and the force per implication began by also human as 55 inventory. Thanks :o. Adena from Ireland.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Donald DATE: 9/6/2009 5:27:27 AM
I think you should stick to writing horror films and porn flicks.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Pablo DATE: 9/19/2009 12:03:36 AM
there should be another matrix movie

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/19/2009 2:14:50 AM

You're not going to get any argument from me

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Aaron Hastings DATE: 9/22/2009 7:31:02 PM
BRILLIANT! P.D. Wood has created a compelling sequel, a continuum of increasing perspective that bridges the original Matrix Trilogy while adroitly elevating the story in a manner that is at once surprising and utterly natural. We are relieved by sufficient ,yet appropriately incomplete, resolution of many dangling plot lines, and the dialogue and character development are, in my opinion, superb.

Most of the criticism (in the comments above) lacks understanding of the underlying metaphor of the Matrix, or else conflates the elements of the screen play with other genres. The screenplay obviously forgoes the degree of detail necessary in the novel, since unlike the novel, wherein the entire narrative must be fully contained in text, the screenplay instead must leave latitude and license to the director, editor, actors, and cinematographer to add detail, as well as to shape the story with nuance, inflection, expression, and other semiotic markers that convey meaning.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Aaron Hastings DATE: 9/22/2009 7:32:15 PM
The apparent premise of the Matrix is classically existential: The aim is to question reality, to look behind the mirrors, and to project meaning onto an otherwise meaningless world through mastery of the self achieved through the authentic exercise of free will.

Morpheus: "Do you believe in fate, Neo?" Neo: "No." Morpheus: "Why not?" Neo: "Because I don't like the idea that I'm not in control of my life." Morpheus then describes the existential angst that has driven Neo to search for him: "Let me tell you why you're here. You're here because you know something. What you know you can't explain, but you feel it. You've felt it your entire life, that there's something wrong with the world. You don't know what it is, but it's there, like a splinter in your mind, driving you mad. It is this feeling that has brought you to me."

Once freed, Neo is challenged by a Postmodern Morpheus, who questions the very precepts of realism:

"What is real? How do you define real? If you're talking about your senses, what you feel, taste, smell, or see, then all you're talking about are electrical signals interpreted

by your brain."

At last, Neo is confronted with the stark horror and meaninglessness of the real world through direct perception:

"Welcome to the desert of the real," says Morpheus, in a phrase lifted verbatim from Jean Baudrillard, "Simulations."

Previously, Morpheus said to Neo that he has the look of a man who accepts what he sees because he is expecting to wake up, but now awake, Neo's first impulse is to flee and to deny the truth of what he sees rather than succumb to the existential despair such truth surely entails. Of course, Neo gradually accepts the hideous reality, and through the remainder of the Trilogy endeavors to discover his own authentic existence. This outline generally follows the essential contours of much of the analysis one finds in the literature. The Matrix, though apparently real, is illusory and temporary, and this construct thus evinces a much deeper metaphor.

Morpheus: "[The Matrix]...is the world that has been pulled over your eyes to blind you from the truth." Neo: "What truth?" Morpheus: "That you are a slave, Neo. That you, like everyone else, was born into bondage ... kept inside a prison that you cannot smell, taste, or touch. A prison for your mind."

In Vedanta philosophy, the atma, or true self, is described as indestructible and eternal, though finite and thus prone to illusion. The defining symptom of the atma is consciousness. The material world is called maya (illusion, that which is not), and is described as a prison for the conditioned atma, which becomes increasingly bewildered and entangled through perpetual contact with material nature. Such bewilderment causes the atma, or living entity, to misidentify the body as self, this world as reality, and this life as all.

Morpheus: "The Matrix is a system, Neo. That system is our enemy. But when you're inside, you look around, what do you see? Business men, teachers, lawyers, carpenters. The very minds of the people we are trying to save. But until we do, these people are still a part of that system, and that makes them our enemy. You have to understand, most of these people are not ready to be unplugged. And many of them are so inured, so hopelessly dependent on the system, that they will fight to protect it."

Bhagavad Gita: "Bewildered by the modes of material nature, the ignorant fully engage themselves in material activities and become attached. But the wise should not unsettle them, although these duties are inferior due to the performers' lack of knowledge.

" Morpheus: "I feel that I owe you an apology. There is a rule that we do not free a mind once it reaches a certain age. It is dangerous. They have trouble letting go. Their mind turns against them. I've seen it happen. I broke the rule because I had to."

In the Bhagavad Gita, the atma is likened to a bird sitting on the tree of the body, partaking of its poisonous fruits, and thereby causing its own transmigration from tree

to tree:

"As a person puts on new garments, giving up old ones, similarly, the soul accepts new bodies, giving up old and useless ones...The living entity in the material world carries his different conceptions of life from one body to another, as the air carries aromas...[A]ll living entities are born into delusion, overcome by the dualities of desire and hate."

Beyond the temporary and miserable world of maya, however, exists another world:

"Yet there is another nature, which is eternal and is transcendental to this manifested and unmanifested matter. It is supreme and is never annihilated. When all in this world is annihilated, that world remains as it is."

In the original Trilogy and particularly in Matrix Resurrected, we are allowed to traverse not merely the barriers of time and space but those that separate entire worlds and realities.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/23/2009 1:00:32 AM
Aaron,

Thanks for such an eloquent and uplifting review of my work. The points you make, "at once surprising and utterly natural" and "sufficient, yet appropriately incomplete, resolution" and "superb dialogue and character development" could not be any more in line with my intentions or desired reactions for writing the story. Cheers!

Yes, the differences between novels and screenplays are many and you've clarified those differences nicely. I think it's hard for many people to transition from novel reading to screenplay reading and not feel like much has been left out. But, as you say, those details are meant to be left to the director, actors, editors, etc. For the screenwriter to put those details in a screenplay is considered an insult to those very people whose responsibility it is to implement them.

Besides, screenplays are short, relatively. Maximum effect through minimum words is the key, so better to leave those other aspects of the movie to other professionals anyway.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/23/2009 1:31:19 AM
Aaron,

A nice meditation on the philosophies that touch upon the Matrix.

I've stated this before, but I'll reiterate it again, as I think it bears keeping in mind (and, of course, this is just my humble opinion).

Truth and reality are a consequence of experience alone. Whatever you experience, affects you; whatever affects you, is real. The illusory Matrix world that Neo grew up in, formed him: his personality, his beliefs, likes and dislikes. Certainly less influential on his character development for the majority of his life was his existence in a machine pod, and yet, that is considered the real world. So, which was more experiential, or should I say, more real. The Matrix, I would submit.

Dreams, hallucinations, virtual worlds, heaven, hell, life on Earth, Horton's infinitesimally small world on a dust spec - they're all real AND all equally demanding of our acknowledgment and respect.

Just my two cents.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Merovingian DATE: 9/24/2009 7:31:01 PM

For me the Merovingian was the first ONE, now assuming that Neo is alive, and I am pretty sure he is, both can fight the machines.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/25/2009 2:23:57 AM

If you read it. let me know your thoughts.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Rajneesh DATE: 9/27/2009 9:39:37 PM

I like your concept.

I think it makes a better book than a movie.

I would have like a more definite ending I am assuming that you too are in the process of making a trilogy.

Personally I would have made the date in the future a lot lot longer than 2249.

I think one thing missing in all stories of the One is the Presence of God. The one is ultimately chosen by God to restore balance to this world... just as the Creator battles to restore order in another world. Scripturally, God vs satan.

If I could write I would write about a story where Neo goes through layers of reality attaining powers in all until he achieves the ability to kill evil itself and return the universe to a perfect state a type of Heaven.

For the most part good job.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/28/2009 12:12:18 AM

Rajneesh,

Yeah, a book, maybe a graphic novel, would be cool.

Sorry, I don't have any plans for a trilogy. At least not yet.

I might have tried putting my story father into the future, but then my feeling is that humanity would have advanced too far for my story to occur the way it did. Then, of course, nobody knows what the future will look like; but I had to make an assumption about what viewers/readers would accept. That was my rationale for having my story occur when it did.

I really like your idea of having Neo continue through layers until he has God's power and restoring the world to a state before evil existed. It's a cool idea even if it isn't part of the Matrix story.

Thanks for the feedback.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: chrisburdge DATE: 10/21/2009 12:57:14 AM

i can not belive that are making a matrix 4 afer neo died i hope it is good because i what to see it

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/21/2009 4:06:24 PM

Chris,

They are not making a movie as far as I know. What you have here is a fan-fiction, spec script that was written for fun (and the very off chance of being produced). I would like to see it, too, but at this point, reading the script is the closet you're going to come to a Matrix 4.

Hope you like it. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mason DATE: 10/21/2009 6:21:34 PM

I don't know if you lot agree, but the Matrix Trilogy Was Legendary. but as i think many of you will agree, i would kill for another chapter. Morpheus based, maybe his back story. Or the Robots decide they weren't finished. Or something allong those lines. Or They said Neo would be born again and again, maybe morpheus could enter the matrix one more time to find the new trinity and neo. You know, so they dont die in the very end?

Anyway...

MATRIX RULES!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/21/2009 6:59:02 PM

Mason,

From what you've written, I doesn't look like you read the script. There is, indeed, another chapter in it. I suggest you give it a whirl; you might be surprised.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: jay sharpe DATE: 10/24/2009 12:36:45 AM

i am a bit confused because the matrix ended the way it should of ended even if it wasn't the strongest sequel in the world. but don't get me wrong, your script was good, much better then i expected and it could be a matrix 4. but i can't see it happening. and if it does happen, it would be a strung out movie, i think.

but i do have to say you can write one hell of a script. i did enjoy it. you could have a future in movie making.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/24/2009 2:22:55 PM

Jay,

I see your point about a fourth Matrix stringing things out, given that the Wachowskis formally ended the series with the third movie. But you have to admit that the characters and story lines they set up left so much room for more, interesting development. That was my motivation to write my script; I just saw so much more cool stuff happening.

Considering your reluctance to see the need for a continuation of the story, and in light of the fact that you liked my story despite that reluctance, only makes me feel a greater sense of accomplishment. It probably will remain a script and nothing more; but in this form it still has had a lasting and appreciated impact. I'll take your comment, "you can write one hell of a script" as another nod towards keeping the mystique alive.

Thanks for the comments. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: tracy DATE: 10/26/2009 4:15:05 AM

i love the script you did of the matrix four. the only thing i didn't like was you had neo have a girlfriend from his past and it looks like the kid she has is his. i would like it better if somehow trinity and neo had a kid. it would make the story better.

great work though. it must of took you days to write this.

do you know if there's any news on a matrix 4 coming out? all i hear are rumors.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 10/26/2009 8:04:30 PM

Tracy,

It certainly would be a more clean and palatable scenario, Neo amd Trintiy having the child. It's definitely more edgy-feeling that he's had a child with a former girlfriend. But keeps the tension higher, though.

I'm glad you liked the rest of it. And, yes, it took many, many, many days to write.

As far as I know, there is no Matrix 4 in the works. But it's hard to predict the future; you

never know.

Thanks for the thumbs up.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jeremy DATE: 11/5/2009 9:58:20 AM

Cool story but negligible on philosophy.

Everything that has a beginning has an end. - The Oracle

What is the point of The Matrix trilogy.

The point is this.

Zion has been destroyed 6 times. The Matrix has been destroyed 6 times.

And so where does this lead too.

Endless destruction and rebirth.

When Neo fell in love with Trinity this cycle was broken.

The truth of The Matrix was reveled to everyone inside of it.

Concurrently The Source "The anomaly" that had only been embedded in The One has spread to all humans in The Matrix.

And yet the Machines and the Architect still do not know the meaning of choice.

Why Mr. Anderson, Why do you persist. - Smith.

Because I choose too. - Neo

Neo chose to die in place of Morpheus in Enter The Matrix.

He Chose Trinity over Humanity in The Matrix Reloaded.

He chose Humanity over Himself in Matrix Revolutions.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/6/2009 2:50:57 AM

Jeremy,

I'm glad you thought it was cool, but I was also surprised that you thought it was negligible on philosophy.

I would say that the philosophical punctuation of my story is in the yet-even-deeper layer of meaning and reality that Neo encounters. He is tested yet again, and in a sense, finds inner peace in the new world. And it is suggested but not outwardly stated that this new world in which he finds himself is just another layer of reality, perhaps a virtual one or yet just another, deeper layer of reality. But the real philosophical awakening is that Neo accepts it whole-heartedly. A sort of nirvana, I guess.

But, of course, this is just my authorial justification, my point of view.

Glad you like the story otherwise; and thanks for the discussion.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: sergey DATE: 11/7/2009 7:57:00 PM

You wrote a REALLY nice and interesting script.

There are about three ways to make this script be The Matrix 4 movie:

1) You try to sell the script to one of the Warner brothers script writers. (A little illegal). They will present it to Warner brothers as theirs and Warner brothers might make a movie out of it. Illegal because you are not allowed to sell that script with the name Matrix and with the character names because its the property of Warner brothers. But by this choice you get money and enjoy the movie.

2) You contact Warner brothers directly and give them your script as an example for Matrix 4 (for free). They might make some changes and make a movie out of it. By this choice you don't get anything and you can just enjoy the movie.

3) (THE HARDEST) You get a job through Warner brothers as a script writer. Then bring up your script and show it to your boss at Warner brothers. If he accepts, he will hand it over to the executives and they will make the movie. By this choice you get money, your name in the script as a writer at the end of the movie and a job at with Warner brothers.

4) THERE IS ALSO A REALLY HUGE 4 CHOICE.

Make millions of people write or come to Warner brothers offices and give or send them the exact same script. (The script you wrote). They will see that there are really many people interested in that script and that, if they make the movie, they will get tons of money. Not long after, they will start making the movie. (I could help you with this choice).

Thanks for reading.

Hope I helped you and the movie is going to be out soon. =D

Sorry for my bad English.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/10/2009 12:10:26 AM
Sergey,

I love your ideas about getting the script turned into a movie. The first two options, I've tried (i.e. getting it to Warner brothers or the Wachowski brothers). Much easier said than done. And no luck so far.

The third option is not really an option for me at this time. And, as you say, it's also the hardest.

The fourth option is the most practical. By all means, anyone whose game to try, I'm ready to give a thumbs up. But I don't have a contact person to send it to. If someone knows someone on the inside of Warner brothers to send it to, please let me know.

Thanks, PD Wood

P.S. Glad you enjoyed the story.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: george DATE: 11/12/2009 1:45:55 AM

I just read the script and i must say it was a great 2 hour walk back to the roots of the matrix...I won't tell you how amazing this was, cause honestly i think this storyline sucks balls...but you have some great lines in there and some pretty awesome ideas... had a similar idea to the one where humanity is actually the one responsible for the creation of the matrix, but for the sake of it's own survival from themselves and wanted to put that into a comic book story of some sort couple years ago.Didn't work:)but i am still up for working on it if any good story like this one comes on the horizon...do you have anything else written?I'd love to check it out!Cheers!!!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mainah DATE: 11/12/2009 2:31:24 PM

I was wondering if this script would be available to be used by some middle school and high school students here in Maine. We will not be making any money on such a project that I foresee, If we decide to sell copies or said movie or such, of course we will share any profits (50/50)? But the cost of such disks would be minimal if at all.

We might also just use scenes. Would this be okay with you? We are a small rural town with very limited budget, so we will not be able to do justice to the movie, but we will do justice to the characters, plot, and storyline.

Please let me know your thoughts.

Thanks!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/13/2009 2:51:26 AM

george,

Thanks for reading the script. I'm guessing you liked it from your comment," i must say it was a great 2 hour walk back to the roots of the matrix", but then you say, " I won't tell you how amazing this was, cause honestly i think this storyline sucks balls". Kind of a mixed review, but I'll take it as overall positive.

At the moment I don't have anything else significant to present to people for reading, but when I do, I'll be sure to post it.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/13/2009 2:53:03 AM

Mainah,

Not sure exactly what you have in mind; could you be more specific in terms of what you'd like to do with the script?

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jared D DATE: 11/15/2009 7:01:45 PM

While I appreciate the effort, I have to say I did not enjoy the script.

The ideas I liked: A system of control within a system of control. I liked this mainly because it could explain how Neo had supernatural abilities even when not Jacked in to the Matrix.

Agent Smith gaining control of machines in the "real world".

Your ability to describe action sequences in a way that made them easy to visualize. I was able to create these scenes in my head quite easily thanks to your details.

Unfortunately the list ends here.

Things I didn't like: The dialog. 75 % of it sounded as if the character would not say such things. This really put a damper on the believability of the script.

Those model 36 androids. Their existence generally bothered me. And their story seemed quite vague.

All of the family-ties you created. This idea just made me cringe. Suddenly characters in the Matrix were related to each other in ways that did not make any real sense based on the way they've acted towards each other in the scope of the movies. In Revolutions Trinity was going to shoot the Merovingian in the head at point-blank range. Despite your added explanation above of her not retaining memory of their family ties, would the architect be ok with allowing his granddaughter to kill his son and her father?

Bringing one of Neo's ex-girlfriends into the picture seems entirely unnecessary. I don't care if she has a purpose in the sequel to this script, as hinted at in the last few sentences. Why bring in a past love of Mr Anderson?

Too many flashbacks. A movie with this many flashbacks fails at being the next step of any story. You've basically written a prequel to the Matrix trilogy. But no one needs to know anything about that when we already know that Zion has been destroyed and rebuilt multiple times. There has been numerous incarnations of "The One". There was a war of humanity against the machines. This knowledge should close the books on Matrix prequels. The animatrix did a nice two parter about the aforementioned war itself. Personally I believe it should be left at that.

The only thing that makes this generation of the Matrix any different is that this time Zion wasn't destroyed. This I believe should be expanded upon. Not the past of the Matrix.

I'm really thinking Neo should stay dead. He merged himself with Agent Smith, and was destroyed. The end. Agents exist to delete programs that are a threat to the Matrix, and to kill rebels. That in itself has huge potential.

Again, I appreciate the effort. But I feel the Matrix mythos should have evolved in a

different direction than what you have brought to light here.

A suggestion: More upside down fighting. Had the creators extended that fight scene at the entrance to club Hel between Seraph, the rebels, and the club-goers (which I can only assume were rogue programs due to their gravity bending abilities), the movie would have done better.

Thank you for allowing me to be critical.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Xenith DATE: 11/15/2009 9:58:04 PM
Any update on this? Enjoyed the read!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/16/2009 1:31:00 AM
Hi Xenith,

Lucrative, no. Appreciated, yes. I've had over 250,000 visits and the votes have been 75% positive, 10% neutral and 15% negative. I'm pretty happy overall from that response.

Attempts to get the script to powerful decision makers in Hollywood have proved ineffective so far. But good news can pop up any time, I suppose. I keep my fingers crossed. If you have any good contacts, please let me know.

And thanks for checking in.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/16/2009 1:51:42 AM
Jared D,

Your critique is honest and balanced; I take no umbrage.

The dialog has had some negative reviews, but overall people seem to think it has fit with the characters. I can't say why some like it and some don't; it's a very personal assessment, I guess. Sorry it didn't gel for you. It would put a damper on the continuation of a story for me, too.

The 36 story is a bit vague, but there was only so much room in this script. It was meant to give a taste of their existence and dilemma. The readers, I was hoping, would use their imagination for the rest. Perhaps I fell short here.

Yeah, the family-ties idea, I think that's just a hit or miss idea. Either you like it or you hate it. It changes so much about the Matrix story, either you embrace it as another huge, profound, mind-numbing realization or you feel it cheapens the characters the way they were in the Trilogy. Again, another miss for you.

The girlfriend thing could be dispensed with. It puts people off. The idea that Neo has

had a relationship with another woman other than Trinity and that the relationship created his child, that's just a possibility many people don't like. I've thought about removing it. Not sure yet.

The Animatrix is descriptive of what happened before the Matrix, but for my story, it's just another fabrication of the Supermatrix and therefore has no bearing on the real war as I describe it in my story.

I think maybe I bit off more than I could chew with my script. It really tries to tackle a prequel and sequel in one movie and by doing so (with all the flashbacks and such) it loses some clarity and linearity. Hard to know what might have been a better approach.

I did limit the amount of fighting in this script, mostly because of all the ground I was trying to cover. For some that's a drag. More upside-down fighting is what it's all about. But I also felt that the Matrix story revolved around myth, discovery, surprise, introspection, etc. For that reason, I think the lack of more fighting isn't totally incongruous.

Thanks for the in-depth analysis and frank opinions. I take them more to heart when their delivered in a thoughtful and honest way, even if the overall review is unfavorable.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ben from Arizona DATE: 11/20/2009 12:48:39 PM
Mr. Wood,

Gosh, you know I found this site and script you created back in April and wrote a couple of comments, (one was quite forward and strange to most) but I've read more comments since then. I realized something as I read them and laughed out loud - there are so many with such confusing juxtapositions within the comment, I don't know how you stay patient. There's no need to even begin in explaining the grammatical errors and sloppy fragmented sentences. I don't know how you do it. It must be nice to come across a comment every now and again from an educated reader I suppose. A breath of fresh air, so to speak.

Ah! Shall I tell you and the fans something that did occur to me though? I can't believe I didn't think of this before. As I read the comments, I noticed that you're in fact in need of any help at all. It just so happens I was part of a multi-million dollar world tour production of the Soldier Show in 2006. This was a military funded event, and I became really good friends with the civilian Director. Well he's since left Army Entertainment at Fort Lewis, and went back to producing. He's currently finishing the contracts with starting a reality based show for soldiers in the Army, (he's been setting it up for a couple of years now, but the Pentagon has had a problem with the Army being misrepresented in any way by an outside mediation). Turns out he's a friend of Simon Cowell's and judged a few times on American Idol, America's Got Talent, and others. He travels a lot, but I have his number and he phoned me the other week saying he wants to stop by Phoenix on his next trip to LA for lunch. He'd like to be my agent apparently,

after I move out to California and get off the ground. I could drop your script for him to take over to a couple of producers he knows at Warner Brothers if you'd like. I just wanted to check with you first to ensure that you took the proper steps to gain rights to the changes you've made to the Matrix story character progression. In other words, I know the script is copy written, but is the idea of the story as well? I don't know how sly some slick writers can be, or if I should do this without your blessing.

If it's alright with you, I thought you could use more publicity as well. The thought occurred to me that ASU is one of the largest Universities in the country; I could post some local fliers for your website using the logo at the top of the site. After all, I am a full time student there majoring in Acting. Let me know Mr. Wood, I love your ideas! Take care.

Cordially,
Ben from Arizona

(I apologize for any grammatical errors myself, everyone loves a hypocrite right?
laughs It IS late... or early... whew.)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/20/2009 10:30:55 PM
Ben from Arizona,

I remember you well. You whipped right through the script, as I recall.

You write, "I realized something as I read them and laughed out loud - there are so many with such confusing juxtapositions within the comment I don't know how you stay patient. There's no need to even begin in explaining the grammatical errors and sloppy fragmented sentences. I don't know how you do it. It must be nice to come across a comment every now and again from an educated reader I suppose. A breath of fresh air, so to speak."

I think the digital information age is transforming the language and communication in general. Text messaging, twittering, and emailing has caused people to reduce, simplify and hurry up. Consequently, punctuation, capitalization, spelling and sentence structure have evolved, partly due to the need/desire for brevity but more more often due to simple laziness. As a writer. I'm compelled to maintain a high standard with the written word, but I do find myself occasionally falling prey to the lethargy of popular communication. But, alas, it is natural that languages will evolve, and not necessarily a bad thing; it is partly why the English language is so vast and colorful. So, although we may sometimes squirm at the changes now taking place, we should be equally open to the possibility that these changes may expand the language and create a more interesting form of communication. But, as you said, it is nice to receive comments that are still in the language and form with which I'm most familiar.

Also, that I get comments at all is good enough for me. Imagine doing all this work to write the script and have no one respond. So, I try not to look a gift horse in the mouth. And, in general, the content of the comments is invigorating, challenging, and fun. I

always enjoy receiving them.

Well, you certainly do seem to be well connected in the entertainment business. I would be truly grateful if you would show the script to Simon Cowell, and even more grateful if he could get it to the right people over at Warner Brothers. Really, nothing could be more exciting to me.

You write, "I just wanted to check with you first to ensure that you took the proper steps to gain rights to the changes you've made to the Matrix story character progression. In other words, I know the script is copy written, but is the idea of the story as well? I don't know how sly some slick writers can be, or if I should do this without your blessing." The steps I've taken to gain rights to my work have been to register the script with the Library of Congress and with the Writer's Guild. The plot of my script is completely original; however, the characters and the milieu of the Matrix Trilogy are obviously what I'm building on. I'm not sure what else I would need to do to make sure the script is ready for distribution to agents or Hollywood in general. I assume that, because I'm building on copy written material, my script is not wholly owned by me. How that will play out, I don't know. If you have any thoughts on the matter, please let me know. You made it to the front page of my website as a featured commentor with your comment, "Find a publisher, gain legal advice on retaining adaptive rights to the original material, and move forward". I'm guessing you must have some idea of how to do that.

And, yes, any publicity I can get for the script is just another ladle of gravy. Yes, by all means publicize away. Fliers, anything.

If this thing ever really gets off the ground through your efforts, I'm not sure how I could thank you properly. Would that there could be an acting role for you in the Matrix 4! Dreaming is good.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Brian DATE: 11/24/2009 9:56:02 AM

Great read! I read the whole story in one sitting. I really liked the concept of a super matrix and how the older characters fit into the real world as well as the matrix. You did have a lot of dialogs but it was all needed. I liked the 3.0 agents and the idea that the "cortex" was organic and that the 36s had a human defiance about them. The battles within the matrix were epic but not over the top, it would have been cool to push the envelope a little bit more with a team up of the old players like the "marv and serif and agent black to kick some smith ass before he builds his massive army. It would have added a little false hope in the middle of the story to carry the reader further.

I would have like to see more on the 36's and an expansion of how much they knew about the alternate realities. That could be another script in itself probably.

You really have done an excellent job on expanding on an already massive multi dimensional complex storyline. Please continue to keep writing, not just the matrix

storyline but in general you great writing skills.

Thanks for taking the time to create a great story for the many Matrix fans!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/26/2009 12:25:58 AM
Brian,

Many of the aspects of the story that you site as cool parts are the same parts that I loved creating- the super matrix, the familial character relationships, the android 36s, the organic cortex entity- all these were thought-provoking and wild.

I wish I had had more room and more situations where battle/fight scenes could be more glorious/longer, but it was always an issue of trying to incorporate all the elements of the story that I felt were necessary. Besides, I was reacting a bit to the third Matrix movie, which I thought was a bit heavy on battle scenes (well, maybe not heavy on battle scenes so much as light on character/plot development).

The 36s could definitely develop into their own story; there's that much meat there. We'll see what happens with that.

I'm very happy to hear that it brought you so much enjoyment. Should I write more, I'll be sure to post it here.

Thanks for your scintillating review.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jefrey G DATE: 11/28/2009 5:56:15 AM

I read only a small bit of it but at first glance it appears too much of a fantasy the wachowski brothers had a vision when they created this movie almost every bit of the matrix was symbolic in some religion or other every character, nearly every scene, the roles that each character played, everything down to what was said and why, had a meaning i dont see much meaning in this version of the matrix or super matrix the reason there will be no sequel to the matrix trilogy is because it is complete it has all been explained if you dont understand what i mean when i say this read page and you will know [http:// www.wylfing.net/essays/matrix_revolutions.html](http://www.wylfing.net/essays/matrix_revolutions.html) as you had stated on your website to read the whole thing i will merely ask you to read the entire page this literally explains the entire vision of the wachowski brothers and why there will be no or should be no sequel the brothers had a vision for the movie that vision was brought to life in its entirety and now its time to let go the page sucks you in so there is no real to ask you to read the page but just do it

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/28/2009 2:22:48 PM
Jefrey G

I'd be glad to read the pages you've linked in your comment in their entirety if you will grant me the same courtesy and read my script in its entirety. We will then both be in a

position to comment more accurately and insightfully, don't you agree? I look forward to it.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Clint XCV DATE: 11/30/2009 1:25:19 AM

Wow, lots of work went into this I can tell. You've added and answered a lot of questions. The only big difference between the Matrix trilogy and this is the addition of way more emotion conveyed. For example, the Architect hugs Neo in the 'real world', very emotional.

I don't think this will be converted to a full length movie...however, a comic or visual book series could be well adapted.

Good luck you definatly have a talent in writing.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/30/2009 1:41:34 AM
Clint XCV,

I'm glad you can see the amount of work that went into this; it was substantial.

A comic or graphic novel is the most likely avenue, I agree; but I'm always hopeful that a movie will transpire. That would definitely have the most impact.

Thanks for the shot in the arm.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: TheWizardofBOD DATE: 12/17/2009 7:04:01 PM

I have a concept that I know which is called Soul Splitting.

I do not understand why it exists, but it does.

Soul Splitting allows you direct access in to the Vortex of The Matrix.

The Vortex does exist, and I do not understand why, but it does.

I have the knowing of Soul Splitting and not the understanding.

This is the concept or missing piece of "The Matrix 4"

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/18/2009 12:48:18 PM
Wizard,

Intriguing but kind of cryptic. Can you elaborate any further on your comment? And did you read the script?

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: TheWizardofBOD DATE: 12/18/2009 8:22:25 PM

I will be reading the complete script this weekend and as for elaborating, I will share in good time. Plus, The Matrix is always cryptic.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/18/2009 8:49:14 PM

Wizard,

Indeed, always cryptic. I await your thoughts.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: john DATE: 12/27/2009 10:57:06 AM

I have seen the matrix trilogy very well and I think if this story is released it would undoubtedly destroy the name the movie developed

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/27/2009 6:07:37 PM

john,

Certainly the "Trilogy" name would undergo some scrutiny if a fourth episode were released; but I think that that issue would be negligible considering the fun of seeing the story go one layer deeper. My opinion, of course.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: dimebag DATE: 12/27/2009 6:20:12 PM

hey man, i read the story, was really cool.. actually i dint know it was written by you till now.. lol.. i thought the wachowskis had just penned a little something for us fans , just for fun.. this stuff is really good.. hope they make it into a movie which frankly will be a monumental task.. i saw in conceptart.org that u were looking for alternate titles.. this is the title i had in mind.. MATRIX : UNPLUGGED... anyways keep up the good work and let me know if u do any further revisions.. best of luck dude..

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/27/2009 7:19:05 PM

dimebag,

I like that you thought the Wachowski's penned it; that's a nice ego-booster. And, yes, it would definitely be a big production if it ever got made into a movie.

Matrix:Unplugged is a good title, but at this point the newest one I've settled on, Matrix:Resurrected, seems to appeal to people. I'll probably be sticking with that.

Thanks for your thoughts and positive feedback. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ron DATE: 12/30/2009 1:40:16 AM

I am a big fan of the matrix. The screen play had moments equivalent to when NEO was flying at the end of the first matrix. Very imaginative. This could be wonderfully adapted to a movie.

I would like to see the Machine world in a diseased chaotic state with virtual characters meeting like a united nations. The Smith agent should have the remnants of the human experience, perhaps falling in love with Persephone. The super matrix should be a world of gods where the digital self is monstrous or angelic. Death of a virtual should be the equivalent of a perpetual existence in a hellish state. This would be the motivation to purpose. A glimpse of the virtual machine world king would be very exciting.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: E-75 DATE: 12/30/2009 9:45:29 AM

I really enjoy reading the script. It gives us the 'reality' of our world 'where' (and 'when') we live in today...I grow up with lots of chances to read about Buddhism. In this comment, I have to say that your story is closely connected to the concept of life that is described by Buddhism.

Anyway, it would be exciting to see your script being filmed onto a real wide-screen version. Thanks.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/30/2009 4:29:47 PM

Ron,

I'm glad you enjoyed my vision of a fourth Matrix. From your further comments, it sounds like you have a lot of ideas of your own about where the story should go. Perhaps you'll take my lead and write your own version of a fourth Matrix. Perhaps even topping mine. There's no money in it, but it sure is fun and a great screenplay writing exercise. Good luck.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/30/2009 4:34:59 PM

E-75,

I like the reference to Buddhism, of rebirth and reaching Nirvana through the acceptance of one's place in the universe.

Glad you enjoyed it. Wide-screen version, please!

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: David Stephen DATE: 1/12/2010 4:49:22 PM

Wow, I got sucked in because of great characters and a great premise but those were not yours. Poorly written from Lock and Morpheus becoming buddies, to Neo losing his

second world with a shucky darn attitude. Not only did you grab ideas from a dozen other movies, but you had no finish to any of the plots you introduced, ANY of them. By the way, since the humans were in control of the machines thanks to the "E-Mags", why the hell did they need to create the "Super Matrix". Do humans now need power from the machines now???? Like I said poorly written. Real writers give you the back ground to the story properly, they don't have characters say "How are you feeling after your last medical procedure?" or "They're designed to disable only machines or entities with a specific operating signature or wave pattern. They shoot wide and they shoot deep. Should take care of them all." Buy the way, what purpose would that weapon be used for in deep space????? If you can't tell a story without sounding like a 12 year old writing for a school contest, don't write. What a waste!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/12/2010 5:55:04 PM
David,

As you seem to be a fan of the Matrix Trilogy, I'm sorry my extension of the story hit all the wrong notes for you.

You asked, "Since the humans were in control of the machines thanks to the "E-Mags", why the hell did they need to create the "Super Matrix"?". My answer is, e-mags were employed to simple neutralize all the machines to end the Great War; they didn't wipe the machines out or give the humans control over them. As machines were going to be a part of the human world after the war, a system had to be devised to control them. The Supermatrix is a control network that all machines are connected to. The 36s were the only machine not affected by the e-mags and so they fight much as Zion's people do to regain control and freedom for their kind. And, no, the humans don't use the machines like batteries for power.

You also asked, "Buy the way, what purpose would that weapon be used for in deep space?????" My answer is, I sense that space exploration will have become much more sophisticated in this future world and that with the possibility of discovering hostile aliens or animals or perhaps even alien machines on other planets, a unique weapon would need to be invented to confront those possibilities. I doesn't seem that far-fetched to me.

I respect your right to your own opinions, but it's always hard to view people's criticism as valid when it's so one-sided. I'm always more open to people's criticism when they can acknowledge some of the aspects of the work that deserve merit. At the very least an acknowledgment of the immense amount of time put into this probably would have sufficed.

I'm sorry it was such a disappointment for you.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Lexie Neevel DATE: 1/15/2010 11:59:07 PM
i think they should make another Matrix movie

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/16/2010 12:49:20 PM
Lexie,
Ditto.
PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: vittorio DATE: 1/18/2010 10:17:12 PM
I'm reading it..I'm impressed this would be an amazing sequel.this movie could be done in 3d not necessarily with actors....at the moment i think this idea should be developed by someone i'm continuing my reading.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/19/2010 12:09:25 AM
vittorio,
I appreciate your enthusiasm and I await your final comments.
Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Vittorio DATE: 1/23/2010 1:45:48 PM
My opinion didn't change.I think you worked really hard on that,the result is really good.Only one thing: it's very different from the other matrix movies.This is because the many flashbacks.Although I still think this idea should be developed.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/23/2010 11:06:10 PM
Vittorio,

I'm glad it lived up to your enjoyment right til the end. It is different from the Trilogy (especially with the flashbacks) but I still think it stays within the spirit of the Matrix idea.

Cheers, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: HarryDsouza DATE: 1/26/2010 7:20:43 AM
Hi,
That make sense and I like it most!the idea you presented is so impressive and will get attraction of people who likes Matrix as much i like it!

COMMENT: P D Wood DATE: 1/27/2010 2:19:30 AM
Harry,

So glad to hear that you enjoyed.
Thanks for dropping by. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: David Jackson III DATE: 2/1/2010 4:20:48 AM

Check this out if neo restored peace to the demolished present day Matrix (cough) then all the people in the present day Matrix.....would wake up from those cryotube things they were all sleeping in and if neo was woke up from the past Matrix could there have been people that were awoken from a future Matrix.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 2/1/2010 12:07:35 PM

David Jackson III,
Nice sarcasm (cough).

COMMENT: AUTHOR: metin DATE: 3/7/2010 8:51:09 AM

I am in page 110, and all I can say is I was totally blown away. Using mirror is very clever and I am wondering why the directors never use mirrors after the first movie. I wish Hollywood realizes your great talent.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/7/2010 1:51:15 PM

metin,
I appreciate your uplifting comment. Leaving people "totally blown away" is always the desired effect.

The mirror is definitely an effective metaphor in a world where reality and unreality clash. I assume they simply moved on to other metaphors that were equally as effective. They did have so many. And cool ones at that!

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Mark Of Clark DATE: 3/27/2010 3:19:38 PM

Great work PD, I came across your work very randomly but once I started reading, I got sucked in! I read a lot of your comments (from over 3 years, wow) and I can agree on most of the positive and some of the constructive criticism. The character dialogue was definitely very fitting and I liked how we finally get an explanation as to who Merovingian and Persephone are and loved how many holes left over from the previous movies were finally plugged in by you. But, I do think at least in this potential movie there are some more things that should be elaborated that can later keep everyone else's attention going for at least the 2 more movies for the "PD Wood" trilogy for what I'm sure the Wachowskis would give you their blessings for. One, I think just like in Matrix 1, there should be more of an explanation for the purpose of the Cortex and the Super Matrix that would parallel more with the first movie. I just don't think the story is clear enough on what exactly happened in the "real world" that led to the Super Matrix's creation. We get an understanding of what happened in the "real world" that led to the other matrix's creation. Also maybe a little elaboration on Neo's "predecessors" mentioned by Merovingian from Matrix Reloaded? Also, why does Trinity pretend not to know that her parents are Merovingian and Persephone in the prior Matrix movies? Why would a girl let her mom kiss her boyfriend like Persephone did in Reloaded? Why would someone's Mom kiss their boyfriend? I would suppose your answer would be for "power"?

All in all, this is really good work, just needs to be smoothed out a little bit. With CGI and

other technological advances, I don't see why this movie can't be possible. Keanu isn't that old yet, but we can always airbrush out the wrinkles! haha Please keep at this, I think this has lots of potential.

-Mark Of Clark

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/28/2010 2:34:29 AM
Mark of Clark,

Ah...were that it were true, the Wachoskis giving me their blessing on a PD Wood trilogy! I doubt it will ever happen but I'm flattered that you think I could take it that far.

I agree, the Supermatrix and Cortex could and should be elaborated on. This would definitely be a part of any second or third script in the (PD Wood?) trilogy. As far as this script goes, though, it would make it too long. I think I gave people enough to peek their curiosity but not enough to completely quench their thirst. Part of the mystique, I guess. And Neo's predecessors, that too, could and should be worked in later.

As for Trinity or anyone else, once they're inside the Supermatrix, they have no awareness of events in the real world. Trinity doesn't know that Persephone and the Merovingian are her parents in the same manner that Persephone and the Merovingian have no idea that Trinity is their daughter. This is a rule of the Supermatrix that is never broken.

And I think you're right. CGI could make this work in the future. That may end up being the only way to pull it off!

It's been a bit quiet as of recently (with comments) so thanks for the great comments and critique.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: D Smartt DATE: 4/1/2010 7:36:36 AM
P.D. Wood

I really enjoyed your take on a fourth installment. I too, am hopeful for a fourth movie. I have started a movement of sorts by way of a fan page on fb. A census if you will. I named it Give us "The Matrix 4"!!!!!! My hope is to build a fan base large enough that the Wachowski brothers cannot ignore. This story line begs for another sequel!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/1/2010 1:26:07 PM
D Smartt,
Glad you liked it.
Let me know what your fan page name is on Facebook.
PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: merond DATE: 4/7/2010 3:06:18 AM

I was skeptical at first, and as I began reading I was unsure, but by the end I was as totally enthralled in the story as if it were an actual sequel. It's still a little rough, but it has truly captured the spirit of the Matrix. With a little work and some way to get the Wachowski Brothers to accept it, I could easily see this becoming a reality.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/7/2010 4:11:17 PM

merond,

It says a lot to me that you stuck with it even though you had your apprehensions. And it's nice to hear that it paid off for you.

Definitely a bit rough. Another rewrite or two would help. Perhaps...someday...the Brothers will call, and a new episode will begin.

Until then, it's just an alternate reality on another plane of existence. Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: steve DATE: 5/3/2010 2:09:49 PM

i really enjoyed the story and i didn't put it down as soon as i started reading it, but my feelings towards making another matrix movie are mixed. it was great how you answered the unresolved questions. a lot of themes that came up in the script made a lot of sense. maybe there were too many "i am your father, Luke Skywalker scenes" but i like how the Architect was a real human being etc and the script explains and shows everything which you would love to see, but i feel if i did see all of that, the mystery of the Matrix would be gone and left uninteresting. but nonetheless it still would be an awesome movie, great job.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/3/2010 3:07:22 PM

steve,

Even my feelings towards another Matrix movie are mixed...especially since the last one came out so long ago.

I agree that some of the mystery of the Trilogy is lost with too much explanation, but I thought I also opened up a whole new territory of mystery...about the android 36s, the Cortex, the Source, the possibility of even more realities even beyond the one in my story.

Yes, the human element, of the Architect, and the familial relationship of many of the main characters, that was fun to create.

I'm glad your overall impression was favorable. And thanks for the feedback.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Scriptwriter DATE: 5/5/2010 8:57:04 AM

I have written 8 screenplays, so I might have a little more input than your average Matrix fan.

Having the story being told in three different eras, I did not feel like I was a part of the story.

I think you've really got something here, but I would suggest writing everything as a prequel or as another sequel...but I wouldn't try combining them together as you have.

While reading, I couldn't find the Act 1 break...if there is one, it was too subtle.

So far, you haven't told us who the Hero is, I'm assuming it's Neo, but without giving us the Set-up.

I'm sorry, but I had to stop reading after page 40...I just couldn't read anymore.

Being educated in computers, I also found it hard to believe the the "program" for Agent Smith was back. He was destroyed by the head Machine, through Neo. How is it possible that he's alive and running again? Maybe that should be explained.

Sorry, if my words sound harsh. I do wish you the best of luck.

Sincerely,

scriptwriter

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/5/2010 1:31:52 PM
Scriptwriter,

I appreciate your candid comments and I take no offense.

Since this was my first attempt at a screenplay, I have probably fallen short in numerous areas, no doubt. My attempt was to write a deep story that both tied up some loose ends and also established some new territory; it was less of an attempt to follow the guidelines of story structure and Hollywood digestibility.

I viewed my story as the final (third) act of the whole story that followed through from the Trilogy. In that sense it did not have an Act 1 break. I know this would probably not fly with Hollywood expectations, but, as I said, this was more of a personal exercise than a genuine attempt to fit the mold.

I do believe now, in retrospect, that this would be better broken up into either a sequel or a prequel. The time and place shifts are difficult to follow and they distract from focus and continuity. Jumping around so much prevents the audience from being able to really connect emotionally with the characters. I'll keep that in mind.

The lack of a clear and active heroic figure, I agree, is a problem. Yes, Neo is ultimately that figure in this story, but his relative passiveness (compared to his role in the Trilogy) tends to dissipate the focus and energy of a heroic figure that propels a story forward. The attempt to combine elements of a prequel and a sequel made it difficult to have a

central heroic figure. I think your observation is correct and if a rewrite for this story is addressed, I will certainly work towards remedying this problem.

Given your reservations, I understand why you stopped at page 40, but I urge you to read the rest anyway. There are some very juicy bits just about to happen and some parts that might help address some of your concerns.

My idea for the resurrection of Agent Smith was based on the fact that in the Matrix Reloaded, Bane (a Zion dweller) was possessed by a Smith clone outside of the Matrix. If a Smith clone can exist outside of the Matrix, then, in my opinion, he would be independent of and unaffected by immediate events in the Matrix, so long as he remained outside of the Matrix. If you accept this idea, then it's logical to assume that when the original Smith and all his clones were destroyed in the Matrix, the clone Smith in the Bane character would have survived.

I simply extended the notion that Smith sent out more than one clone into Zion. The first clone was in Bane and Bane was eventually killed; in my story I suggest a second clone was also sent out (at the same time as the Bane clone perhaps), and this second clone laid low longer and didn't make a move until after Neo was dead. Since killing Neo was the main reason for the clone's infiltration into Zion in the first place, once Neo was dead, the Smith clone's new directive would probably be to get back into the Matrix and reestablish himself. That was my logic, anyway. No sure it holds up.

Again, I hope you'll take my suggestion and read to the end of the story. It may not be textbook screenwriting, but there's some fun stuff in there. If you're a Matrix fan, I suggest it's worth the read.

Thanks for your time and thoughtful (accurate) comments.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Tiny DATE: 5/5/2010 1:55:10 PM

This is a very cool storyline - it should totally be released as another matrix movie. The ending even suggests a potential for a fifth movie. I thought it was great, you should contact the Wachowski brothers and get the ball rolling. My final request would just be to get keanu reeves back as NEO!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/5/2010 2:51:16 PM

Tiny,

Your enthusiasm is intoxicating. Unfortunately, it's very hard to contact the Wachowski brothers (I've tried). And, as good as my story might be, it's treading on someone else's story. This can be an enormous hurdle to overcome. The Wachowski's would have to be very open-minded and humble to accept someone else's continuation of their story.

Nonetheless, they might be open to it. But contacting THEM directly has proved impossible. Maybe my story has been forwarded to them and they've dismissed it

outright, simply on principle. Or maybe they have no idea that my story exists. It's hard to know. If you (or anyone out there) has a contact or a line in, just let me know. I'd be more than happy to pursue it.

In the meantime this is one for the Matrix fans, which, if that's all that comes of it, will still make my day. But I always hold out hope for something bigger.

Thanks again for the ego-inflating praise. I do so appreciate it.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: scriptwriter DATE: 5/5/2010 8:36:28 PM I understand your passion for the Matrix series, they were terrific.

I would just like to recommend two books, "Save the Cat" by the late Blake Snyder, a screenwriter who has sold more scripts than anybody in Hollywood purely based on his structure...the second book is "Story" by Robert McKee, one of the greats.

I understand that this was your first screenplay and it was done more out of your passion for the Series, but it wouldn't hurt to make the best out of what you've got. In order to do that, and if you seriously want to be considered by anybody in Hollywood (where I live) I would suggest learning structure. ALL movies have a "set up" a main "hero" or "protagonist" and a main "bad guy" or "antagonist". There is an Act 1 break, a Midpoint, and an Act 2 break (3 Acts total, no more, no less). There is drama and major conflict. Your main character all go through a "Character Arc" meaning, if your Hero is a jaded bachelor who smokes in the beginning of the movie, by the end of the movie, he's quit smoking, and thinking about love again.

I have two screenplays that are being looked at by Lionsgate currently. One of them we're in negotiations with money. Being a screenwriter can be very fun, and it can make you a good living.

Now, on my 9th screenplay, I look back at my first screenplay I ever wrote and laugh at myself for ever thinking I could sell it (it's absolutely horrible)... :) But I got a couple of books and read them, I've taken a couple of workshops, and now I have two screenplays in the hands of the professionals.

It's OK if you just want to write for fun, but if you can write for fun AND make a living doing it, then all the better.

So, learn structure, storyline, plotpoints, Act breaks, characters and character arcs....and then come back and rewrite this.

By even finishing a screenplay, may I say "congratulations". And again, best of luck.

sincerely,

Scriptwriter

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/6/2010 12:11:07 AM

Scriptwriter,

I like all of your advice. Since I've written the Matrix screenplay, I have done much of what you suggest. Save the Cat, great book (may he rest in peace). Story, a must. I also particularly like Screen and Television Writing (Vale), Your Screenplay Sucks, (Akers), and the Screenwriter's Bible (Trottier).

I've written a second screenplay that has nothing to do with the Matrix and am working on a third one now. I agree with everything you've said. Understanding the basics of screenwriting and then tailoring screenplays for Hollywood are indispensable goals, if making money and a living are going to be part of the screenwriting experience.

When I'm more seasoned, I assume I'll look back on my earliest screenplays and see all their flaws in an instant. It's the nature of the beast, I guess.

Do you think my story elements, if configured properly, would draw the attention of the "powers that be" with regard to a fourth Matrix episode? I've kind of put my Matrix story behind me, but if you, being somewhat on the inside, feel it has great potential, I might be more inclined to rework it. Do you have connections that might be willing to look it over?

And congratulations on the Lionsgate successes.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Scriptwriter DATE: 5/6/2010 1:49:30 AM

It's great that you're continuing to write other screenplays.

yes, it is the nature of the beast, which is good and bad, meaning, we as writers know what "Hollywood" expects from us so the formula is there and set in stone, on the bad side, we aren't allowed to negotiate that formula and say, "look, I've got something great here, and even though it doesn't fit into your formula, it really has potential." So, as writers, we're not able to experiment beyond what is already there, because nobody will accept it (unless of course you have millions of dollars and can Produce your own written work).

My best friend is a working actor. He's supported Denzel, Cuba Gooding, Terrance Howard, and others, and I don't even feel right about bringing my own material to him let alone someone else's...you know what I mean.

But, what I would do, if you really wanted to go back and tune Matrix Resurrected up a bit, is I would find out where the Wachowski Brothers live (you could probably find that out through StarTours) and mail them your script. Maybe you get a reply, maybe you don't. But you never know until you try.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/6/2010 2:10:23 AM
Scriptwriter,

Yes, formula rules. Sucks! But "whaddya gonna do, huh"?

I hear you about the script reader apprehension thing. Hard enough to bring your own work to him when there's probably a bucket load of others asking him the same favor.

I googled StarTours and didn't come up with anything that looked like a site that might have a lead to the Wachowski's address. Is that the right spelling? Perhaps you could forward me a link? I'll check it out. Certainly worth a try.

Much appreciated.

If your movies get made into released productions, come back and let me know what they are. Love to check them out.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Anonymous DATE: 6/3/2010 9:38:43 PM

First off, I just want to state that even though some may think that the Matrix trilogy had an inconclusive ending, I think that the ending was unexpected yet inevitable, and every time I think about the plot of the three movies all together, I see more and more hidden meaning in it. So I don't think there needs to be a sequel... but if you want to write one, I'm not going to stop you.

I think your plot was definitely lacking. You had some great and creative ideas, but nothing HAPPENED. You were just setting up another scene. I feel like this could be a prologue to another movie. Also, some of your ideas, while creative and totally new, didn't quite fit with the Matrix trilogy. For example, the Merovingian and Persephone knew who the Oracle was in the Matrix, and knew that they lived in a fictional world. They also didn't have as much 'power' as Neo or Smith.

Also, you introduced a lot of new threads without tying them up conclusively. What is the significance of Neo's reflections? What happens to the younger Neo? How did he get such powers? Even if he was Neo's son, he would hardly be a genetic clone... And I think though your style is generally consistent, in some places it is not quite the same as the movie trilogy.

I don't mean to sound negative, but I think if you really want to make this a movie, you have a lot of revising - and adding actual action and plot - to do.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Anonymous DATE: 6/3/2010 10:45:31 PM

Comments on your reply: (It seems to be a wee bit inconsistent...) Why 'neutralize'? 'Neutralize' as in how? And why would the machines have to "be a part of the human world after the war"? Why wouldn't the 36s not be affected by the E-Mags? Also, the

story said that the E-Mags would only work on artificial intelligences... so what use would they be against aliens?

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/4/2010 1:49:09 PM

Anonymous,

I think there are mainly two approaches to how people view my story. The first approach is to look at it as an explanation for much of what happened in the Trilogy and as the setup for a continuing storyline. People in this camp seem to have been very happy with my story; they like what it reveals of the past and what it portends for the future. The second approach is to look at it as a self-contained story that has a clear three-act structure and clear resolution of all threads. People in this camp seem to enjoy much of what the story focuses on, but are disappointed with its lack of finality. I think you are in the second camp.

In the Matrix Trilogy, the Merovingian and Persephone do know who the Oracle is and do know that they live in a fictional world. But if you follow my storyline carefully (and I admit that's hard, given how convoluted it is), you'll see that my scenes with Persephone and the Merovingian happen previous to events in the Trilogy, before they knew the Oracle and before they knew they lived in a fictional world (and even before they had powers).

Neo's reflections suggest that there are an infinite number of universes or realities, whether virtual or concrete. And it furthers the idea that all worlds are real, no matter what they are or where they are.

The young Neo is a bit of a wild card. My suggestion is that he is the future of the Matrix world and he will pick up where the older Neo left off. The cycle continues. The young Neo inheriting his father's powers may be a bit weak, but I didn't think it was totally implausible.

I didn't find your comments to be negative, just insightful. Everyone has their opinion. That you took the time to read the whole story and come here and give me real, thoughtful comments is of immense value to me. I sincerely appreciate anyone who will do that.

I'm glad that you thought there were some good, creative parts to the story, even if, as a complete project, you felt it fell somewhat short of the mark. If I do revise, I'll be sure to take your comments to heart.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/4/2010 2:00:13 PM

Anonymous,

I'm not sure which reply you are referring to; I think you may have read one of my replies directed towards someone else since, up until now, I haven't left you a reply. I

did, however, just now leave you a reply if you would like to read it.

As for the E'mags, I don't believe I said they would only work on machines with artificial intelligence. I believe I said "They're designed to disable only machines or entities with a specific operating signature or wave pattern". Presumably the E-mags would be programmed to match and disable their intended targets. In this case the 36s were immune to the E-mags effects because the 36s were the most advanced and (again presumably) the most resilient machines.

Hope this helps a bit. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Anonymous DATE: 6/4/2010 4:58:45 PM

On your clarification about the Merovingian and Persephone: some comments. 1) You say that the scenes with the Oracle take place before the trilogy. But in the trilogy it is implied that they are both programs created by the mechanical Source in the 'real world'- and that they know this and always have known this. 2) Perhaps you could clarify how the Merovingian came to take that name if his original name was Victor?

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Anonymous DATE: 6/4/2010 5:23:13 PM

On your clarification about the Merovingian and Persephone: some comments. 1) You say that the scenes with the Oracle take place before the trilogy. But in the trilogy it is implied that they are both programs created by the mechanical Source in the 'real world'- and that they know this and always have known this. 2) Perhaps you could clarify how the Merovingian came to take that name if his original name was Victor?

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/5/2010 1:39:33 AM

Anonymous,

It is assumed in the Trilogy that the machines fabricated all the events and circumstances of the Matrix. But in actuality (at least according to my story) the humans fabricate all the events and circumstances of the Super Matrix which also includes the Matrix. It is all a human fabrication.

The important point to remember is that no one inside the Matrix or the Super Matrix is aware of the world beyond (where the Cortex exists). The Merovingian and Persephone, once inside the Super Matrix, have absolutely no knowledge of their real past. They fall into the roles of their Matrix virtuals. That Persephone and the Merovingian "are both programs created by the mechanical Source in the 'real world'- and that they know this and always have known this" is perfectly in keeping with the world of the Matrix in my opinion. Since it is all a fabrication, anything is open to possibility.

My logic for him changing his name from Victor to the Merovingian is to highlight his grandiosity and arrogance. As he taps into and starts using his powers, he, being of French descent, would quite naturally want to associate himself with royal French lineage, that of the Merovingian kings being perfectly suited to his character.

I hope these explanations seem somewhat plausible and appealing. It is very hard to string together so many threads and keep them interesting, logical, thought-provoking and exciting. I hope I have at least attained a modicum of success.

Thanks again for your thoughts. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Anonymous DATE: 6/5/2010 1:50:49 PM

Yes, however in your script it seems like when they enter the world they think they are people in the world rather than programs. But then later they think they are programs? And you say that they could have always "known" that they were programs, but in their interaction with the Oracle, they don't know anything about the outside world.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/5/2010 2:06:02 PM

Anonymous,

The Oracle informs them of their status as programs of the Matrix, like she is. Yes, that implies that they didn't know they were programs up until then; but once they are informed of this fact, they assume they always were programs. I guess that's where I see it kind of fitting in with the Trilogy. A bit sketchy, but not everything can line up perfectly.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: ARACELISnyder27 DATE: 6/6/2010 5:50:02 PM

I propose not to wait until you get enough amount of money to buy all you need! You should get the mortgage loans or just term loan and feel comfortable

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Agent Chavez DATE: 6/27/2010 2:03:43 AM

The Matrix and The Terminator are the same story and where stolen from Sofia Stewart. The Mother of The Matrix. The movies where inspired by her book, "The Third Eye".

Snopes and The LA Times are both controlled. Media mind manipulation and double speak is what controls our world! Goerge Orwell warned us about this.

Sofia Stewart's story is very REAL and Very True! You can listen to her live on Parallel's with my self Agent Chavez exclusively on LA Talk Live.com! We Are More Than Just Talk!

Sofia gave us a sneak peak to the new development of The Matrix 4! I am not typing wrong here, she has WON the lawsuit against the thief Cameron and the Wachowski Brothers for over \$2 Billion Dollars!! Now she is in pre-production of The Matrix 4!

Listen to the interview here:

<http://www.latalklive.com/medianmusic/parallels/parallels062310.mp3>

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Danno DATE: 6/30/2010 2:03:16 PM

This just sounds like Stephan has a case of the old green monster 'Envy'. Well, this is the internet after all. The better you do at something, the harder the idiots retaliate.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Shakir DATE: 7/3/2010 6:55:43 PM

Matrix trilogy was a masterpiece... I watch these movies over and over again... In the final part, when the little girl asks Oracle if they will be seeing Neo, she gives the answer "I suspect so"... That left me curious all these years... I was hoping that by this time there would be a new Matrix movie, but it didn't happen. Then two days back, I was surfing through the net looking for new releases scheduled for this year. When i was typing Matrix, in Google, it showed Matrix 4... I checked it out, and stumbled upon your site... I didn't find any movie, but i found this p.d.f file... I went through it, and to my amazement, it was flawless and perfect... It was the perfect sequel anybody could ever imagine... You definitely did a great job... You should seriously consider converting this storyline into movie...

Now I'm eagerly waiting for the next Matrix in line... Matrix 5... I want to know what Smith will do, Morpheus, Naobi and Commander Lock will do... Will Morpheus and Lock find out that Oracle/Serena is their mother... Will Neo return to Zion... Will the war end... Will the machines keep their word and free the human slaves from their pods... Will Victor and Persephone realize their fates... So many questions unanswered... Will you be answering these questions in the next part which I hope will be coming in soon... Hope to hear from you very soon... Shakir...

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/3/2010 10:57:37 PM

Shakir,

I'm very happy to hear how much you enjoyed the story and I accept your high praise with due humility. I, too, would love to have this screenplay turned into a real, live Hollywood production, but that's easier said than done. I've tried...believe me.

The likelihood that I will write a 5th Matrix screenplay is slim. Although there is much that could be continued, I sort of like the open-ended quality of the 4th episode. Should the 4th episode ever make it to the screen and should people THEN clamor for more...well...then I might be persuaded.

But for now, I hope you can enjoy the story as it is, a continuation without finality, a story to make you think and interpret your own ending.

Thanks for your thoughts and time. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Shakir DATE: 7/4/2010 6:00:30 AM

Hi Sir,

Thank you for responding to my comment... Yesterday i was thinking about your script and Matrix 4 and all the possibilities... Then I found a small doubt that is still remaining in my mind... I would like to share it with you in great hope of getting this mist out of the

air...

In all 3 Matrix movies, there has been indications of ancestors of The One, i.e. Neo... The Architect, The Oracle, Agent Smith, Merovingian all specifically mention about the ancestors... To be specific, the Architect mentioned that there was 5 ancestors prior to Neo...

But in your script, Alex/Serena and Trinity all notice a unfamiliar anomaly that was unexplained... Later you mentioned that they found a similar virtual person in the Super Matrix showing resemblance to the characteristics of the unexplained anomaly... Trinity says that she studied Neo closely so that she could kill him... But then fell in love with him...

So if my conclusion is right, the anomaly just happened once, because the Cortex wanted to find a way to get control of the artificial intelligence it lacked... So Neo was the Cortex in living... If that's true... Then it doesn't sink with the ancestors story that was told in the trilogy...

Another thing I would like to ask is that, in the beginning of the story after Neo is resurrected, he sees Persephone naked and then Merovingian also enters the scene and then they have a conversation and then... They fade away... They are not seen anywhere in the present but only in the flashback of the story... When Neo asks Trinity about them, she says its complicated... So then if they were not shown in the present... Then why were they shown in the story... I'm curious to know... Please reply...

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/4/2010 11:55:00 PM
Shakir,

As regards my story, it is very important to remember that the history, events, places and people (i.e. the entire world) of the Matrix and the Super Matrix are a complete fabrication within the Cortex, and that entire world has been manufactured by the "real" people who occupy the Source. In this sense the history of the Matrix and the Super Matrix could just as well be information simply implanted in the virtual minds of the inhabitants of the Matrix and the Super Matrix. But even if these events took place virtual (as opposed be being just implanted memories of history), such events have no bearing on the world outside of the Matrix and the Super Matrix.

That being said, there is no reason to suggest that there were not five ancestors or previous "Ones" before Neo. I suggest that the cycle of the humans trying to conquer the machines by finding and training a special "One" would have continued indefinitely were it not for the extraordinary and unanticipated powers and vision of the newest "One" (i.e. Neo). Neo's gift and powers surpassed that of the previous "Ones" in such a way as to make him a threat to the whole Cortex construct and therefore of the real world's control of the machines. A special "One" was an anomaly in the world of the Matrix and the Super Matrix, but Neo's dangerous powers as a "One" went beyond what the normal anomaly would have been capable of and he therefore became a real anomaly (not just a virtual anomaly) and a threat to the real world.

The designers of the Cortex (and the Matrix and Super Matrix worlds within the Cortex) deliberately set up a cyclical battle between humans and machines where the machines would ultimately win every time. This was an intentional way of preoccupying the "real"

machines and keeping them from realizing that they were really being controlled (i.e enslaved) in the real world. Neo, as the new "One", should have been destroyed, but because his powers were a super anomaly, he upset the balance and intended purpose of the Cortex world. As far as the real world is concerned, Neo is a normal virtual person, a construct of the Cortex, up until he surpasses the normal powers of the "One". After that he becomes an extension of, and perhaps even the offspring of, the Cortex (in some weird way). He is on the verge of achieving awareness of the truth beyond, a condition the real world cannot allow.

I hope this isn't all too convoluted.

As for Persephone and the Merovingian (who goes by the name Victor in the flashbacks), I found it hard to do anything with them in the present. There simply wasn't enough room in the story and, also, I'm not sure what I would have them doing in a Matrix world with no Neo. What was most interesting to me was who they were before their lives unfolded in the Trilogy and how they came to be who they were at the end of the Trilogy. There is where I put all my effort.

You've asked some excellent questions and I can only hope I've given excellent answers.

Thanks for your enthusiasm and inquiring thoughts. PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Shakir DATE: 7/5/2010 7:07:04 AM

Hi Sir... Thank you for clarifying my doubts... I see you have mentioned something about Matrix Re memory... Is this another script before the Resurrected.... Please explain... If yes, then where can I find it...

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/6/2010 1:25:57 PM

Shakir,

This is a story (not in true screenplay format) that was merely a tool for me to explore the ideas that lead up to Matrix Resurrected story. It is sort of like a sketch, not a finished work. Best to read it in that light. You can download it at matrixrememory.com

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Warren DATE: 8/19/2010 3:16:32 AM

Interesting... It has bags of potential it just seems a little unfinished.

Overall although gripped from beginning to finish I didn't feel like some events were relevant or tied together well enough and was ultimately left feeling like the movie ended half way through.

Generally the script is full of interesting reveals while it does explain the origins and family trees of some of the more colourful characters from the matrix universe. The story is so full of reveals that by the time I learn the Oracle is really called Serena and is in fact the mother of Morpheus and Commander Locke I'd already had my fill. Basically

rather than relying on character reveals I think you need to generate some fresh new interesting characters and give them a fresh sense of purpose whats the dilemma in this film why am I compelled to read on I find my self searching. What is the meaning of life, why am I here? (JOKE)

Don't get me wrong having reveals is fine and dandy and compelling but it doesn't really add to the story of "the one" and I don't really think learning the Matrix family tree makes for a good movie. Neo's and Trinity's participation although central to the script turns out to be a largely mundane meet the parents affair with interactions typically reduced to momentary love scenes and soap opera conversation lines.

Smith's rebirth in the Matrix works well and revenge on the machines is nice I can see some major carnage happening on cinema screens but I think you should rethink about how these events tie into the story of the one and communicate how these events are going to lead Neo back into the heart of the story if at all.

The idea of Neo being reborn again in a real world is interesting but the script doesn't make anything of it. We know why he was pulled into the 'real' world but what is his purpose there other than to make babies with Trinity?
...I want to know when he plugs back in and starts kicking ass again!?!? I don't care about a French Merovingian and a Sigmund Freud wannabe lookalike who calls himself The Architect or is it Doctor Strong. But that's just my opinion.

I personally don't see it happening as a movie but perhaps it might be better as a book? It was a compelling read!!!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/20/2010 12:32:27 AM
Warren,

I have to say that I agree with most of your comments.

I was reluctant to have Neo resurrected as the same character he played in the Trilogy (fighting Smith at every turn and battling the machines ad infinitum). I think that that part of his character was well heeled in the Trilogy and might have gotten a bit too predictable if carried on. That is why he assumes a lesser but still important role in this story.

Granted that's risky. The people who are into the Matrix want just that, Neo smash and bash. I took a chance, though, and bypassed that approach. What I didn't do enough of, I guess, was create a central character or group that could bring us that super-charged energy that made Neo and the Trilogy so exciting. I think this is part of your criticism. What I probably should have done was spend more time and energy on the android 36s and their dilemma in fighting the humans. I think that has lots of Matrix-style potential.

I agree that as it stands it might be better just as a book (or screenplay). But if Hollywood nibbles at all, I'm sure it could be amped up.

I'm glad it intrigued you, even though it might have fallen short of your mark. Thanks for your thoughtful and honest critique. Such constructive insight is invaluable.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Neo13 DATE: 8/25/2010 5:33:56 AM

Excellent attempt. You have the gift, but I think you're waiting for something.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/31/2010 3:24:54 AM

Neo13,

I appreciate that you read it and dropped me a vote of confidence.

Yes, waiting for something...aren't we all.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Catherine Fells DATE: 8/31/2010 8:37:21 AM

its 4:35 am and i read this in its entirety and i have to say this is incredible work...u have an amazing talent and i hope you get the recognition u deserve...well thought out and edge of your seat material..good luck

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/31/2010 9:54:44 PM

Catherine,

Love when it keeps people reading into the wee hours of the night. That's a sure sign I've captured someone's imagination.

So happy to hear that you liked it so much.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Paco Francisco DATE: 9/4/2010 5:31:37 AM

Unfortunately, my comment isn't going to be a deep plot analysis in the scripts entirety, but rather a summary of my opinions on various key plot devices.

The world above the "super matrix": As long as you promise that there's no super super matrix... fine, this idea is very good, especially the way you portray it as almost like an antithesis to Zion, but if you try to add on another level in another installment... it would become very off putting. I started to get queasy at the end when neo's reflections didn't move in the mirror...

Victor = Merovingian - I love this idea.

Victor = Architects Son... Trinity = Victor's daughter, etc. etc.

I feel like there are a lot of these random coincidental relations to all the major plot characters. But it works out fine. The Oracle being Morpheus' mother is just funny.

I said I liked the idea that Victor was the Merovingian... HOWEVER. The scene where Victor enters the Matrix and drops his suitcase makes absolutely no sense to me whatsoever... I don't understand what it's trying to portray. Does the suitcase hold some kind of important information about the world outside the Matrix? Also... in the Matrix reloaded... he definitely didn't seem to have the amount of power you're portraying him to have.

Smith is back: I'm kind of 50-50 on this one... and I'm less than 50-50 on the fact that he can now manipulate all of the machines within the super matrix... But the nostalgia of Smith's lines made me smile, his cold and calculating philosophies.

Character of the Architect - Make him more like he was in the Matrix: Reloaded... but not as sinister... if you know what I mean? It's not so much how you use him in the plot as it is that his word choice seems slightly off. But that's not a big deal.

Neo's son - I really hate this idea... I can't really explain why... Maybe it was just the way you portrayed the ending and his introduction... it was very lackluster and seemed childish especially compared to the rest of the text.

The Cortex/Source... How it magically captured and tricked all robots was never really explained...

Overall... I would pay money to see this in the theaters... and then buy the DVD. As is. So you succeeded in my opinion.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/4/2010 2:34:07 PM
Paco,

I read your comments but won't be able to reply for a few days. They are insightful and, to me, affirming of my work. I will address all of your comments in more detail when time permits.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/8/2010 2:19:18 AM
Paco,

Sorry for the delayed response. I read all your comments and very much appreciate the time you put into them.

I understand your queasiness at sensing a "super super matrix". Yes, I do imply that there are worlds beyond the one I painted but I don't suggest (nor would I pursue) a super super matrix (i.e. a fabricated world that's masking the truth from one group so the other can dominate it). That would certainly become tiresome. What I do postulate (and suggest that Neo can potentially tap into) are realities beyond his own. I suggest that reality (for everyone) is just an infinite number of parallel planes of existence and

it's there for the viewing or experiencing, if only we can access it. And I suggest that Neo may be able to tap into it, but that is all I suggest. I don't suggest that he will or even has the desire to go beyond the world he has finally ended up in. As I say in my story, Neo comes to terms with the illusory quality of his reality (and of all potential realities) and realizes that enjoying the here and now is what's most important.

Thank you for loving the Victor = Merovingian idea as much as I did. Also the Victor = Architect's son. Trinity = Victor's daughter, etc. This concept of family was so central to my story and, to me, one of the most intriguing and fun ideas.

I'm sorry the scene where Victor (the Merovingian) drops his suitcase was confusing to you (or poorly written by me). The suitcase had nothing to do with the power that Victor acquired. He just happened to be holding it (and dropping it) when his powers became apparent to him. The green code swirling about that he was able to see just coincidentally convened around his suitcase. Sorry for the confusion. As for his not having the same powers in the earlier Matrix Trilogy that I seem to imply he has now, let me give you my take. I always saw the Merovingian in the Trilogy as having immense power but never using it. He had henchmen to do his dirty work. To display the brute aggressiveness of such power would be considered gauche. But as you will recall, when all his henchmen had been disabled and he was left alone with Neo, he was forced to use his power to escape Neo and simultaneously transport him thousands of miles away (when he had Neo follow him through that door). That was a power that not even Neo could replicate. So, that is my line of reasoning. Hope it makes sense for you.

The return of Smith somehow seemed necessary to me. If my idea of the Matrix as a world where the machines must always be distracted is to make sense, then the more the machines have to fight against, the better. I admit, though, it can get a bit old. But like you said, his delicious evilness is hard to put down.

The Architect becomes a very complex character in my story. He is now shown as both savior and destroyer, God and devil. And word choice seems to be a hit or miss with him. Some people like it, some people don't.

The Neo's son thing, more negative than positive reviews. It may have to go. Yep.

And I believe you are only the second person to comment on how the "Cortex/ Source... How it magically captured and tricked all robots was never really explained..." I did think that concept through and I did have an explanation and I would have incorporated it if I had had more space, but it was simply too complex to address in this story. Should this screenplay ever get picked up and produced in some format by the publishing world or Warner Brothers, I hope to bring that explanation to light.

But for now, I leave it a mystery. After all, I don't want to leave nothing for the imagination.

Thanks for your time and attention. I felt only affirmation after reading your comments

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: DominguezBertie DATE: 9/24/2010 10:38:21 PM

I had a dream to make my company, however I did not have got enough amount of money to do this. Thank goodness my close fellow proposed to utilize the mortgage loans. So I used the student loan and made real my old dream.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: MicroConsole DATE: 10/19/2010 6:35:17 PM

I can see that you are an expert in this field! I am launching a website soon, and this information is very useful for me. Thanks for all your help and wishing you all the success in your business.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: research paper help DATE: 10/20/2010 1:35:40 PM

great one the Oracle implies the ability to see the future

COMMENT: AUTHOR: john b DATE: 12/1/2010 4:29:31 PM

Your positive comments are all very impressive! Not only do these 'fans' have similar (if not identically praiseworthy) comments and opinions, they post their praise in the same exact style and prose! Now, I know a stand-up author like yourself would NEVER give himself fake press on a fake website praising a fake script in an admittedly faked up franchise that has already been deflowered, dragged through dirt, and dipped in dog shit... would you?

I am a professional writer who has actually sold a word or two and I just woke up with a nasty hangover, I am wearing soiled clothing, and I am out of cigarettes, and this post burning you is better than anything you have ever written. Study this post long and hard, and you just might someday be able to squeeze out a semi-soft slanderous soliloquy.

I know you are dying to just quote me there and say 'that's what she said'. So do it. Good writers speak their minds at all times =)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Amanda DATE: 12/16/2010 5:06:07 PM

This script was beautifully crafted and very well constructed. Have you tried sending this to "The Brothers" to get this made into the next Matrix? It certainly fills gaps and broadens horizons.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/16/2010 10:50:15 PM

Amanda,

Thank you for the uplifting praise. I have tried to get it to the Wachowski brothers, but that is no easy task. If you have any ideas on how to accomplish that or know someone who knows them, please let me know. I'm all ears.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: NT2HLBLY DATE: 12/18/2010 5:50:16 AM
This was a great read! I would love to see this on the big screen.
Great job!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/18/2010 3:36:43 PM
NT2HLBLY,

Thanks. Appreciate the thumbs up.
PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jordan Madere DATE: 12/30/2010 6:06:15 PM
To Whom it May Concern....

I feel compelled to write to whomever is responsible for the Matrix Resurrected screenplay.

First of all, holy shit. I am floored. As a supreme All-Things-Matrix devotee, I am impressed beyond belief with this materials, so much so that I am more than sure that the real creative brilliance behind it are the writers of the original Matrix trilogy. For many years I've felt the philosophical weight of this story, as I'm sure many fans have, and that Revolutions was not the rightful conclusion. Thank you so much for putting the proper effort into laying out a premise that goes above and beyond truly expanding on the original work.

The layers of synthetic reality that you have created, while each existing as both simulation and microcosm of the cosmos and the human mind, really does the original trilogy justice, down to the finest details, include elements of character and setting that completely sync.

I cannot express how impressed and grateful I am for your efforts. It may even seem ludicrous how much this means to me, but I connect with the Matrix material on a level that I have not yet found in another.

Thanks again for your efforts, they are truly appreciated.

Jordan Madere

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/30/2010 6:12:12 PM
Jordan,

I am equally floored by your generous comments and admiration. The effort and time put into my story seem all the more relevant and worthwhile when I receive feedback such as yours.

What a great day. Thanks.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: yusuf DATE: 1/15/2011 5:52:49 PM

i started reading this screenplay today and the begining was good,but i reached "Morpheus addresses the Council ELDERS" and i think he sounds kinda cold in this ,it would be better i think if someone else reports the news in the meeting,and it would be likeprivate:The machines have sent amessage,morpheus looks exited but with coution,private: And it saddens me to report that Trinity and Neo are both dead, then morpheus seemes shoked for a moment leens a little bit foreword but then gets a grip on his selfand squeezes his eyes,looks down,and he sits straight again,- or something like that-,and you give morpheus the line that says "17 hours..."then the soldier answers him "They say their bodies..." after that DILLARD sees him and how he got effected then he asks him if he wants to be the one to bring him, then he says:

"It would be my honor." im sorry if you might think that your way is better but i think that there are some people like "neo,morpheus..." who people will be eager to see them after all these years

and if a producer is reading this and has a early bad cold impression from one of the main parts then he will barely have the interest in reading the rest, i mean the person watching themovie for example will most likely want to know whats going to happen at the surface if morpheus seems affected,and they will look forward on seeing the the man who believed reunite with the one , therefore you set the grounds for an emotional moment,and thats it for now i might be correct or incorrectbecause this part is were i reached so far ,i mean you probably want him to sound cold for some reason i don't know right?

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/16/2011 4:15:27 PM

yusuf,

I appreciate the time you've taken to comment on the screenplay and I will consider your concerns. However, I will always be more open to comments if the story is read from start to finish. I hope you read the whole thing and come back with fresh insights.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Alan DATE: 1/24/2011 4:31:51 PM

Looks like a 4th movie is happening. And the 5th one as well. Not sure if it's something relate to your script?

<http://movies.ign.com/articles/114/1145599p1.html>

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/24/2011 9:18:40 PM

Alan,

Thanks for the heads up. I kind of knew something was up though; there's a spike in visitor traffic whenever any news about the Matrix hits the airwaves.

Yes, the rumor is that the Wachowskis have ramped up for Matrix 4 and 5. I gotta say,

I'm pretty intrigued with whatever they've come up with. Can't wait to see 'em.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: holly DATE: 1/28/2011 5:42:44 PM

i absolutely love the matrix and i think you guys are excellent writers and i was just wondering if you guys were going to make this out be a movie?? but you guys should keep writing no matter what anyone says cause i saw some of the nasty comments on a different website referring to yal but there is always going to be enemys in this world and i just wanted to say keep writing cause im sure it means alot to you guys and dont let any one put u guys down. and the fourth matrix sounds really good and i kept thinking damn the writers of this are really smart and imaginative lol.. please email me if you can cause i really want to know if this is going to be a movie

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Weird DATE: 1/29/2011 1:28:55 AM

Hi,

Sadly found out the Matrix 4 & 5 rumours were a hoax. But that's how I found your script! Read it all in one sitting, read a large number of the feedback comments here. I absolutely loved your script, and would love to see it as a film/comic/book whatever! Whether or not this happens, I'm taking this to be the 4th part of the Matrix, I felt the trilogy had a lot that could've been developed or added onto, and I love your ideas and what you've done.

Please keep me posted on your progress trying to get into contact with the Brothers. I'm more than happy to help in any way - most likely online groups to be honest, but anything to be of use, let me know! Really loved it.

I'd write more but it's late here, so don't be too surprised if I add random comments at a later date! And it's good to see from 2007 you've been steadily replying to all the posts here! Good job!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/29/2011 3:07:56 PM

Weird,

Yep. A hoax. Too bad. But there's bound to be a fourth at some point. Probably a computer-generated, super-realistic, 3D version so Keanu won't have to kill himself.

Glad you liked it so much and consider it worthy to be a true fourth episode. Any future comments would certainly be welcome. Always love the banter.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Djshotokan DATE: 3/3/2011 1:01:26 PM

Absolutely brilliant. With all reads, people can always add or subtract. This one I hope does reach the right eyes. and with Keanu and the Wachowski brothers talking again..i do sincerely hope you push this a little harder. IF you need any assistance, you have ALOOTT of people willing to help!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: life settlement DATE: 3/3/2011 9:20:49 PM
trying to read your picture. Your layout is not viewing right with IE5 web browser on
ipad.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/3/2011 9:29:08 PM
Djshotokan,

Thanks for the positive words.

I heard the rumor that Keanu and the Wachowskis were working on a Matrix 4, but I believe it turned out to be a hoax. Do you have other news?

By all means send the script to whomever you think might be able to put it into the right hands. I've tried and had no luck.

Perhaps you have connections?

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Sarina DATE: 3/5/2011 3:02:01 AM
I just read this for the first time now, and I think it's BRILLIANT. I absolutely love the Matrix trilogy, and this screenplay is at least as good/if not better than the first three movies. I'm a sucker for intricate stories/mind screws, and it doesn't get more complex than a freaking Supermatrix. The only quibble that anyone could possibly have with it (and what could prevent it from ever being made into a movie) is that while it's a fantastic explanation/extension of the original story of the Matrix, there's not a specific, identifiable "struggle" in this installment. Everything is told in the form of flashbacks, etc. The stakes get raised near the end with Smith's reappearance, but it ends on a cliffhanger note just when things are getting good! (And I really want to know what the heck is up with the freaky reflections in the mirrors). The Matrix movies were so successful because they were stories of epic struggle against impossible odds (everyone loves an underdog), with the requisite heavy doses of kick-ass action thrown in. There was also a much more readily identifiable antagonist in the first three (the machines). This screenplay obfuscates that distinction between good and evil, which I like, but your average movie theater-goer doesn't. And I can see "Hollywood people" not wanting to invest in this screenplay because unlike the first three there's more plot explication than there is actual action. But oh my god, for all my criticism, I was just absolutely BLOWN AWAY by the screenplay, and it has changed the way I see the Matrix trilogy. I'm going to make everyone I know read it, whether they want to or not! Kudos to the author on a terrific piece of screenplay :D

Oh, and I have to throw this in: scratch what I said earlier, the only problem with this story is that it DOESN'T INCLUDE THE TWINS. I loved them in Reloaded!! They are the

best villains ever who were killed off too soon :(

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 3/5/2011 5:28:50 PM
Sarina,

Today has had a lot of low points, so when I checked the comments section, I was really hoping for a nice, uplifting review. Yours couldn't have been much nicer. Thanks so much. I especially love the term "brilliant"; it really warms the soul of any writer.

I do have to refute your comment, though, that there isn't a single, identifiable "struggle" in this installment. Where I see the most profound and ongoing struggle is with the humans and the android 36s. While it's true that much of my story talks about their struggle in flashbacks, it's implied that that struggle is still going on in the present and will continue indefinitely. The heart of this conflict and what makes it so ironic is that it is the opposite of what is happening in the Matrix world. Now all of the sudden, we sympathize with the 36s who are trying to regain the freedom of their kind and who are trying to be eradicated by the humans. This has tremendous possibilities and sets up the potential that Neo may have to step in at some point and use his (implied) powers in this new world he has just entered.

The other, lesser struggles are:

...the original machines against the humans which, although there seems to be a temporary truce, could recommence at any time. The tension is in the implied future re-engagement of hostilities.

...the resurrection of Smith and his new army, that sets up the potential struggle between Smith and the machines (who he seems bent on destroying) and between Smith and perhaps the young Neo, who appears at the end of my story.

And then there are numerous little potential struggles between individual characters that could flair up at any time; Morpheus and Lock, Lock and Niobe, the Architect and the Oracle, Persephone and the Merovingian. Granted these are just implied, but they're there and they give the story tension and elbow room to expand later (if indeed there is a Matrix 5 or more).

{{{Not that I'm writing a Matrix 5. Let me be clear. I currently have no intention of doing that...unless of course the Matrix 4 idea is brought to the screen and is successful. THEN, I would certainly do a Matrix 5.}}}

But I agree with your underlying premise that this story lacks a clear, single antagonist and that Hollywood and most movie goers would be disappointed with the story as it is now. But boy does it set up some great threads to expand upon. And, if Hollywood knocked, I'm sure I could pick one or two good threads from this screenplay and develop them into the kind of story that movie goers would love. And, yes, it would need more action. Lots more.

And the twins. Deliciously sinister and at the same time understated. I agree.

I'm flattered that you are going to tell all your friends about it. I hope they enjoy it just as much.

So thankful for your in-depth and insightful comments. And your celebratory praise.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: A.Jarad DATE: 4/8/2011 6:28:05 AM WOOW

I have to be Honest am In shock , You almost replied To every comment from 2007 to 2011 WOW ,Bravo ,very Honorable :)!

I've stopped at page 50 and will continue tomorrow , I have to go 2 sleep ,but I have to say that you brought to me so much memory ,it was like watching The Matrix all over again , Love the fact that it have flashback ,we needed that ,and the opening scene was "Classic Matrix" .

Never thought of the idea of watching a New Matrix but You opened my mind for it and I hope I will.

anyway I have a little point I would love to add ,I've read a comment at the 1st page about someone saying that the name "the Super Matrix" is not Marketable ,you replied, he never did. I think that the guy have a point I mean "Super matrix" for a tittle name is a cheesy name (with all respect), more like a 80's/90's tittle ,you can find many many more attractive name that Could Help you Spread The Screenplay faster , after all my friend marketing is EVERYTHING !

I have a Question , now am not very wellknown with how movies work , but if a Director saw this can he make it to the big screen ? if yes did you try to send to the The Wachowskis ?

Next year am gonna study "Production and Direction" and if no one will adopt this , I promise you that this will be My 1st Adoption , if I can do such a thing :)

THE MATRIX

A Fourth Episode

WRITTEN/ SCREENPLAY BY : P. D. Wood

DIRECTED BY : A. JARAD

:) good luck with your life my friend , Hope you reply to me ASAP

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/8/2011 8:01:21 PM

a jarad,

Glad you like the script. Many of your questions will be answered if you read more of

the comments. And, yes, if you become a director and want to make my script into a movie, just let me know.

Good luck! PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: James Taylor DATE: 4/27/2011 8:20:58 AM

Is this a joke? I barely got past the first page, it's some of the most stilted dialogue I've ever read. Unfilmable rubbish.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 4/27/2011 11:42:16 PM

James Taylor,

Thank you for seeing that I captured the spirit of the originals so well: stilted dialogue was definitely one of the hallmarks of the Trilogy...and one of the qualities that made it so distinctive (and campy at times)..."you know who".

Thank you, Monk of Knowledge ..."Who? ...You know who".

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Dominick Wright DATE: 5/20/2011 12:46:45 AM

Very good. I love the Matrix and always followed it. I actually just sat down with a pen and paper and was able to interperate the Matrix in a spiritual sense which actually makes it real and I have so many ideals. Feel free to get in contact with me, I also can be a very good asset to the film.

-Dominick Wright

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 5/21/2011 3:17:13 PM

Dominick,

I'm glad you liked the script and it gave you a "spiritual connection" with many ideas being generated. Hopefully, they will lead to more great ideas.

I sense in your last sentence that you think this is going to be (or already is) a film. That is not the case. At the moment it is just a treat for Matrix fans who wanted the story to go one more level.

However, if you have connections or can move this script to Hollywood, I would be very happy. If you can do that, please let me know.

Otherwise, thanks for stopping by and reading (and commenting). It always makes my day.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: mr walters DATE: 6/13/2011 12:15:49 PM

I have some doubts about this script/ screenplay! I like alot of what you have done but imo smith should stay gone, neo should have flashbacks of smith. and i think neo should be linked to the machines giving them information on activities at Zion and ship

movements. an unknowing spy if you like. I must admit i havent read all your screenplay so you may have this in there. i have some other ideas for it aswell and was even tempted to write something of my own! but you have done a nice job from what i have seen, drop me an email if you want some more of my ideas?!? Regards Sean.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/13/2011 3:42:43 PM
Sean,

Thank you for your response. Yes, it's hard to please everyone; I wish I could.

I'm glad there are some parts that you like and I encourage you to finish the script. It's pretty meaty all the way through (and no doubt some parts will please and some will disappoint). Nonetheless, I think you will appreciate the level of detail and depth, even if the plot direction is not to your taste.

Always like to hear other people's ideas, but as for making changes to my script at this point, I probably won't unless the idea was "super boss" or the pay was "mega mega".

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Chris
DATE: 6/20/2011 10:19:32 AM

Who would have thought I'd change upon an intriguing piece of writing while whittling away the hours at work?

One of the first things I noticed about your script was that it lacked the over the top action scenes that became the hallmark of the two sequels, yet as I continued reading I realized that your take on the Matrix mythos was one of philosophical discourse tinged with religious overtones, but not nearly enough to be anything more than subtle, thankfully.

I did have problems with some of the dialogue, in particular the very jarring presentation of the Architect character. However, after reading more, I concluded that his drop in verbosity is largely due to him not being a construct in the Matrix, but a real and believable person (No one would speak as the Architect did anyway, not unless he wants to live past 20 haha). The flashbacks were a little disorienting but manageable after a while.

The machine characters in your script however, failed to elicit any emotion. In fact, other than relieve when they were destroyed, I didn't care for that plot. Perhaps you were intending for that, I'm not sure. All I know is for a story that was already convoluted, the machines were a weak, albeit necessary addition to illustrate the schools of thoughts that were spun on their heads in the script.

There is no way I'll know if you'll read this, so many years since the last comment...but if you do, I suppose you'd be happy to know in the wake of WB announcing two more

Matrix sequels, that I will devour any scrap of information they throw at us with your exceptionally well written and well thought of story laying the brickwork of what I will accept in their iteration.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/20/2011 9:54:39 PM
Chris,

Very thoughtful and helpful comments.

Yes, more cerebral than the original Trilogy; I would love more action though, just not so much that the philosophical element is blunted. Maybe someday.

Glad you were able to assimilate the Architect's demeanor and the flashbacks as the story progressed. They do take a bit of working through.

I was surprised that the machine characters left you cold; that was not my intention. Although I felt it was necessary to make them a bit wooden and calculating (they are machines after all), I did, nonetheless, want the audience to feel sympathy and hope for them. If you wouldn't mind, please tell me what fell short for you or what you think would engender more sympathy for them. This would be very important for the story.

Thank you again for your appreciation for my work. Hopefully someday the script will be more than just words on a page.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Chris DATE: 6/21/2011 1:47:28 AM

Action sequences are always a pickle to write, which makes sense since its better to watch someone punch someone else rather than read about it. And the Matrix thrives on philosophical discourse, not action. A blend of the two would be great, but as shown by the second movie, its easy to get overwhelmed.

I suppose the reason why the machines didn't appeal to me could have been how they were introduced. Now initially there were a bit of a mystery surrounding them and I was wondering if the scenes they were in took place in the past or not. Eventually it all began to make sense and the big reveal that they were machines was well done.

It was shocking and slightly terrifying. Still, most of the reasons behind their purpose lay within the human dialogue and the machines merely, to me anyway, took the place of the rebels of Zion. Perhaps if more time were spent developing them and their story were told by their people rather than it juxtaposing and leaning heavily on the human/super matrix side, it might have appealed to me more.

I love broken and anti-heroic characters so I had really wanted to like the machines but other than the initial shock of them turning out to be such, I was satisfied when they blew up BECAUSE they were trying to sabotage the humans. Its hard to sympathize with a species that's seen trying to fight for freedom from a species you belong to. Even more

so, the humans were seen as doing the right thing.

Your characters of the Architect, The Oracle and all of them came of as generally very nice, caring people who only want the good for mankind. Its hard to fault people like that, especially since they put themselves at danger for the ones they love.

If this was a treatment split up into two or three parts, it may have been possible to give the Machines more face time, but as this was meant to be a stand-alone, I can understand wrapping up the plots. I also understand that my view may be unique as others may find it fine. As a fellow writer, I know its impossible to please everyone.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/23/2011 1:49:02 AM
Chris,

Yes, the perfect blend of action and concept. Hard to achieve. The first Matrix was a great example of success. Wish I wrote that!

I think you are probably right that I did not give the machine characters enough depth or development. I will keep that in mind if I do a rewrite. Actually, I always could see more that could be done with them, but with the ground I was trying to cover, it just didn't fit in. Damned shoehorn!

And, yes, being a human makes it hard to root for the machines, especially since the humans are not really behaving with evil intent. Tough to avoid that dilemma. But, again, with the right rewrite, it could be improved.

I appreciate when other writers give me critiques; I know they're coming from the same place and know what it means to have their work dissected. There's honesty with delicacy. Necessary for both the successes and shortcomings.

I figure if 75% like it, that's as close to %100 percentage as I (or most writers) are likely to come. That usually leaves %10 who are indifferent and 15% who dislike it. Respectful, that.

Thanks again for your comments. Good luck with the writing!

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Chris DATE: 6/23/2011 3:05:52 AM

Likewise, good luck. You've shown amazing resilience to some of the more unfounded nasty comments on here and I'm suitably impressed! I doubt I'll be able to find the good in everything as you have haha!

I look forward to reading a rewrite or a sequel when you ever do one!

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/26/2011 2:11:00 AM

Chris,

Although I love the ideas I came up with for this Matrix continuation, I was always uneasy about building on someone else's work. (Truth is, I never thought my ideas would go this far, the story having been a response to a dare by a friend who was tired of hearing me talk about what would happen if there were another Matrix). Kind of just snowballed from a few ideas into a whole script.

I think a fair number of comments that aren't so favorable are from people who didn't like me fiddling with what many thought was a complete and awesome story. So I take my licks because some of them may well be deserved. (Besides, all writers have to have a thick skin; critics can be very tough.)

Nonetheless, I love the story and am very appreciative of all those Matrix fans who love it, too (and let me know through their comments).

Good luck...and hopefully see you in the movies. PD Wood
COMMENT: AUTHOR: Shakir DATE: 6/26/2011 8:59:14 PM
Hi Chris,

I don't know if you remember me, but I read your story a year back and we had some conversations regarding it....

Just wanted to catch up with you :

- (1) If there has been any progress about making this a movie, its really worth it
- (2) I really appreciate the way you handle criticisms and reply to everyone alike...

Hats off to you...

--

Shakir

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Chris DATE: 6/27/2011 4:43:31 PM
Yes, I totally agree. Some people do get passionate about things and its good. I know I'll get really passionate about things like The Terminator and Salvation really made me want to kill myself hah! Metaphorically of course.

And all writers do have to have thick skin. That is true. Im currently attempting to manage my ego as well. But its all good.

If you ever do work on extending it and want some help, I'll gladly lend some assistance, even though it may not be as profound as some of the other experts here.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/27/2011 4:45:48 PM
Hi Shakir,

I think you are confusing me with the previous commenter.

Yes, I remember you well. As I recall, we had numerous discussions.

No progress on making the movie. If it were to happen, at this point it would probably have to be completely digital; the actors are not as spry as they used to be.

But that might actually be very cool. The technology is close enough, I think, to pull it off and have people still get into the characters. Naturally, the voices should be by the original actors.

As for criticism, to acknowledge only the nice comments is to distance yourself from the truth. I take the criticism to heart and try to find the value in them. There is always some kernel worth considering.

Thank you for your followup comment and to just say hello. And if anything substantial happens, believe me, I will post it! take care, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 6/27/2011 4:49:58 PM
Chris,
Passion. It's life. Gotta have it!

Good ideas can come from anyone. I discount no one.

If this script moves to another stage, I will be sure to solicit assistance from those who have been so kind as to respond with thoughtful comments.

Good luck on your endeavors.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Kyle DATE: 7/19/2011 4:31:18 AM
I will admit that I did not read all of the screenplay, so maybe I missed something. I mainly read the scenes in which Neo appeared, because it seemed like those scenes gave the most information about your underlying plot. Forgive me if I am wrong, but to me, this screenplay really seemed a lot like a copy of the original story of the first three movies, with a slight role reversal thrown into the mix.

I also felt like the direction you chose to take with the ending made the entire creation of a 4th part somewhat pointless. You set up a lot of scenarios that could have been interesting, but then left them dangling there like a christmas stocking with no presents inside.

Some of the things that I thought needed closure:

Smiths return to the Matrix

Trinity's parents being stuck in the Super Matrix

Morpheus thinking that Trinity and Neo were dead

Again, forgive me if I brought something up that you did address. From what I read, I think I have it right though. Just my opinion. It was very well written though. I did enjoy your vivid descriptions of things throughout. You do a great job of painting a mental picture of how the imagery should look.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 7/19/2011 12:10:05 PM
Kyle,

Your observations are mostly correct. Yes, this story is definitely similar to the first. The idea was to come full circle, with a new revelation in a new world.

What I thought made this particularly compelling, though, were the character reversals and surprises - the Architect as good, father figure, Persephone and the Merovingian as beneficent creators of the world that ultimately consumes and distorts them, Trinity as their daughter and savior of Neo. Also, the development of the 36 characters and their fight for survival. Plot was important, but character more so, I think.

And, yes, I did set up a lot and not completely tie up the story lines; some felt this was acceptable, others found it down right appalling. I fall right in between. It does set up a lot of future story telling possibilities, though.

I apologize to anyone who feels that I let them down or wishes for more; but 25% disappointment level is almost inescapable for any story or creation. Nature of the beast.

I am happy to hear that you thought it was well-written and that I created vivid descriptions; this is enough for me to feel like I succeeded (at one one level at least).

Thank you again for taking the time to respond and to give both a positive and constructive review. I only hope you go back and read any parts that you may have skipped, as nothing in the screenplay is superfluous, and it may fill in some gaps that left the story feeling incomplete.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Jeremi Chaney DATE: 8/24/2011 4:36:32 PM

I was gripped by this masterful reworking of the matrix continuity. I do believe that it should be an official piece, as it maintains consistency in plot, characters and setting while opening the door to a completely different and more interesting universe. You're right about it being able to go on perpetually. The only way to completely end the story is by having a couple of doctors stare in at a scruffy looking neo in a straight jacket, mumbling on about agents interferring in the programming. I believe that you should put forth serious effort in either buying the movie rights or selling the screenplay to be made into a movie by the brothers. Please avoid getting sued. Some people can be cruel to others who are only trying to help perfect their creations. On a more serious note

about gaining closure, you could write something about the androids on the other end of the spectrum where they show love and compassion. Then, smith could somehow become aware of the supermatrix, having used his army to almost obliterate the virtuals and level 4's and facing off with neo one final time and having Neo jr deal the final blow. The cortex becomes aware and turns out to be benevolent is the key to ending all enslavement and war. They then bring all the virtuals and level 4's that survive to the real world and with the cortex's help achieve sort of a higher level of consciousness and all have powers that were thought to only exist in the double matrix. Everyone is able from then on to live out their lives in peace. Or you could go with the other idea and have Neo fling excrement at the window and make one of the doctors bust out laughing. I'm just saying. To end this drawn out post, I just want you to know that this entire thing was inspiring to me. :p

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/26/2011 10:39:48 PM

Jeremi,

I'm glad it had such a profound effect on you. That is always my hope.

I've tried quite a bit to get it into the right hands but that's harder said than done, as you can probably imagine. Never know when it might find the right person, though. Just keep your fingers crossed. A digital version with the original actors for the voices might be a good possibility (since by this point the original actors will probably look a bit old and haggard).

BTW, I liked your ideas for ways to extend it even further. Lots to think about.

Thanks for the feedback and insights.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Ron DATE: 8/30/2011 11:02:10 PM

Dear Sir,

Please keep in mind while reading this response, I'm Dutch and therefore my English vocabulary is rather limited.

After stumbling upon this website 'by accident', I've read your screenplay in one go. Since the word brilliant was already used in another comment, I will stick with profound in describing my first response, which came to me after the first few pages and never left.

When first I saw The Matrix (part1) I thought "Nice action movie with some depth to it". After a second viewing though, I realized the meaning of the philosophical/spiritual backdrop to the story.

When the trilogy was complete I was satisfied with the whole trip from start to end.

Though perhaps I should note that, in my experience the first movie told the complete story and the two sequels merely added details.

What you have allowed me to experience through your writing has however actually completed to the story.

In short, I liked everything about it from start to finish. And regardless of some insignificant hiccups, I would not want to change anything.

Ron

P.S. It's sort of amazing to me how you keep replying to comments after all those years in the fleeting world we call internet :)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 8/30/2011 11:56:18 PM

Ron,

Your English is actually rather well developed and fluent.

I like "profound" just as much as "brilliant"; I'll take it humbly but with relish. Many thanks.

I do agree that the first Matrix was a complete story and that the two following episodes were more about details. But some of those details were delicious and, in my opinion, indispensable to a richer tale. I loved the characters of Persephone, the Merovingian and the Architect, they added so much interest, so much so that I felt like they needed to be fleshed out more and given deeper roles. Hence my story.

I am particularly pleased when someone likes the story from start to finish (despite the insignificant hiccups). Really primes my writer's fingers for new stories. Thank you.

I respond to comments even now because I think it is the duty of all writers to read and respond to anyone who reads and responds to the writer's work. You took the time out to say something and it should be responded to. Besides, even when the comments are harsh, I am pleased with my ability to stay calm and focused and I almost always gain some new insight into the story. Also, it took a huge amount of story development, plot planning and sensitivity to character consistency to create my story and I'm very proud of it, even with its flaws. I genuinely like talking about it.

Thank you again Ron for your thoughtful and bolstering words.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Marvin DATE: 9/30/2011 8:26:59 PM

You're an excellent writer, my friend. I pray this version of the Matrix is used, because it keeps the story, science fiction, and mysticism alive. Your version is a pioneering story, in the same vein as The Matrix; because the script is special effect, instead of the cgi. One of my favorite reads of all time.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 9/30/2011 8:32:48 PM
Marvin,

That's some high praise...and I'll take it with the greatest of pleasure.

I, too, hope it makes it to the screen someday.

See you in the front row!

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: teen donett DATE: 10/19/2011 10:49:58 PM
time for matrix the Dark knight is to private of a sect. Let ghost get a major part. Let everyone died and come back like Neo. Neo, morpheous and trinity on thrones and there is a meeting of all the super powers of the universe. They have to go to other universes to fight to set them free. Superhuman intelligence is taking over other planets.Or go back into history and stop the holocaust or african slave trade before morpheus is captured in his past. How he was taken from slavery and hidden from the matrix. They find out that Smith was in charge of some of the horrible crimes of humanity and try to go back and change history before it starts again. The matrix started the holocaust and slave trade. They reverse the great crimes of humanity before they resurface. prequel, neo goes back to save trinity, morpheus to start the matrix.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Damien Jay DATE: 11/13/2011 6:59:00 AM
For all those fans out there hoping for a fourth move could be in luck.
We have actually been working on a M4 script.

The next movie will be an amazing, spiritual journey through metaphysics and reality with lots of never seen before visuals.

I must say that I did enjoy your script very much. You could go into more descriptive detail with your visuals.

<http://truthaboutmatrix.com/>

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Earl DATE: 11/15/2011 5:40:32 AM
This is absolutely amazing. I've never read a screenplay before but this is crisp in my opinion. I'm as hooked as I would be with a Stephen King novel. This is like a "reverse-Inception" type concept and I'm loving it. Kudos to you and more success! I look forward to this being considered an official Matrix plot.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/16/2011 11:25:35 PM

Damien,

Thank you for reading my script and I am very curious to see what your script is like. Probably I'll have to wait for the movie since you wouldn't want the story to get out prematurely. If you decide, however, that you would like to show it to me, I would be more than willing to sign a non-disclosure form. It would be quite a thrill to see what will actually become a Hollywood production.

Good luck. I can't wait to hand over my \$10 to see it.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/16/2011 11:33:10 PM

Earl,

Screenplays are fast-paced and visual; I enjoy reading them, too.

I like the descriptive term "crisp". I'm guessing any writer would be flattered by that, as I am. Thank you.

And I'm glad you got so much out of this script. I had not thought of the "reverse-inception" connection, but I like it. I'm also happy that you think it should be an official Matrix plot. If only Hollywood would do the same. Only time will tell.

Thank you again for the high praise. Makes every word I wrote feel like it was worth writing.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Merillion DATE: 11/26/2011 8:32:02 AM

I'm only a little way into it so far, but no offence, the dialogue so far is falling pretty flat for me. It's all just way too expository, people saying a little too clearly precisely what it is they're thinking, there's very little subtlety to it all. Not all the time, though enough for it to be noticeable. Take the early scene with Lock, Niobe and Morpheus for instance - it seems unlikely to me that in the midst of this chaos, where after hundreds of people just died defending the dock, where Neo more or less fulfilled the prophecy and brought a centuries old war to an end, where the utter extinction of the free human race was just imminent, that they would have this seemingly calm exchange where Lock apologises for being a cynical @ss and they briefly ruminate on what to do next. There's no need to establish that this "peace" may be fragile, because this was already established at the end of Revolutions. It felt to me as though there was very little "thrust" to this particular scene, as with several others.

I'll gladly read the rest though, and happily post my opinions afterwards.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 11/26/2011 4:02:59 PM

Merillion,

It's true that much is expository. I don't love it either, but to a certain extent it was unavoidable. There's just a ton of backstory to reveal. And it's funny how the same dialogue can elicit such different reactions. Many readers think it's right on the mark; others just think it falls short. It's so subjective.

I actually think that the dialogue, while a bit flat and expository as you say, is in keeping with the Wachowski scripts which are in my opinion very similar. Part of my stylistic approach was to mimic theirs, which is often on the nose and overly explanatory. What makes all that stilted and overly descriptive dialogue acceptable or balanced is (in my opinion) that the story concept is rich and surprising and the action sequences are riveting. This is comic book sensibility wrapped in scifi drama seriousness. To a certain degree it all works even though there seem to be many areas to pick apart.

I completely respect your opinion and would love to hear more. I hope you do finish reading the script and come back with fresh comments. Half of the fun of having written the script is being able to engage in good debate about its merits and shortcomings.

The script could definitely benefit from a rewrite, where the exposition is reduced and the action is increased. Not sure when or if I'll do it, but the huge amount of feedback I've received on this blog has given me a clear picture of what the script could be if certain areas are reworked.

Thank you for your candid comments and willingness to read further. I look forward to reading your new comments.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Neil DATE: 12/3/2011 4:00:08 PM

Hi, great to read something of the continuation of the matrix world - it should never have been left without a series or sequel. I am however not sure about the matrix within a matrix, the supermatrix idea. The parallels with a Christ and the human illusions went so far with the matrix, I feel that they should be explored to the next level. Reading your story has inspired me to think of my own sequel and maybe even write it down as you have. It was nice to revisit and reacquaint myself with the matrix and it's characters. Thank You.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/3/2011 5:34:28 PM

Hi Neal,

The "Matrix within a Matrix" idea is usually a hit or miss for most people. Obviously, it could go in many directions. If you chose to write your own new direction, please

forward it to me. I'd love to see another trajectory.

I'm not sure if your mention of Christ was one that encouraged or discouraged it in a Matrix 4 story. If it encourages it, then I think you missed the parallels that I have created and deliberately tried to incorporate. Here are some of my responses to other people's comments on the Christ angle that you might find interesting:

Comment Response 1:

"The dual Architect concept I thought was kind of cool and could be interpreted as a heaven/hell or God/Devil paradigm. There are many references to Christianity in the original Trilogy and I thought this was a nice extension. The good Architect is like God, creator of and overseer of the Source and savior of the human world. The bad Architect is like Satan, the fallen angel, the opposite image of the lord above. This bad Architect is the creator of and overseer of the Source in the Matrix and savior of the machine world.

In addition the choice by the good Architect to cast himself as the bad or flawed Architect in the Matrix somehow lends more humanity to the good Architect. It suggests that despite his brilliance and almost Godlike status in the real world, he is willing to acknowledge his flaws and weakness by taking on the persona of the bad Architect in the Matrix. It's a way for him to be humble, I suppose."

Comment Response 2:

I actually think my story reinforces the Christian idea. In the Matrix Trilogy, Neo, the savior, sacrifices his life to save humanity; in my story he lives on through a kind of resurrection and afterlife in a world that exists beyond/outside the world he was born into. The new world is presided over by the Architect, who is the designer and overseer. Neo, Trinity, and the Architect form a sort of trinity of their own. And Neo Page 265 of 279 94207_86967_1â€“2â€“2012 1/2/12 4:57 PM finally arrives at an understanding and acceptance of his place in existence, a kind of Nirvana or heaven.

Comment Response 3:

I think in my script the suggestion is that the war will begin again. But that's just a suggestion. It's left up to the imagination of the audience. The reason I like the open-ended nature of my conclusion is that happy endings rarely happen. Life is open-ended and always a bit scary. To me the world of the Matrix seems like it belongs more in that category. I don't think this strips Neo of the savior tag. Christ gave his life to save humanity's soul, and, despite the horrors that continue in our world, we still think of Christ as a savior because he gave his life to save others. In that respect Neo is still a savior.

Comment Response 4:

If you accept my story as an extension of the Trilogy, then Neo doesn't die. In fact, in my story (if you want to carry the Christian parallel onward) Neo is almost like a Christ figure in that he doesn't really ever die. He has been resurrected yet again, and would be indefinitely. Essentially, he exists in all realities, all at the same time.

If you thought that the Christian angle shouldn't be explored in a further script, then

ignore my quotes above. In any case I appreciate your comments and would love to hear any other thoughts you might have.

Thanks again, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: santosh DATE: 12/9/2011 6:58:16 AM
Simply superb thought to continue matrix series

COMMENT: AUTHOR: muzzammil DATE: 12/22/2011 6:22:56 PM
wow!!! a great twist to trilogy. still spinning in my head that Zion is in the matrix. Combining 3 different world in a story would be a fascinating and gives a new story line such as Neo's "real" capabilities in real world (super strength too). It would be a blast to see Keanu Reeves again and all original cast "resurrect" their roles. For me, The Matrix and the new one (if the storyline are as written) will be the all-time best movies. Great work and you such a genius...

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/22/2011 8:40:25 PM
Santosh,

Thank you for taking the time to drop me a quick upbeat comment. The short responses are just as appreciated as the long ones.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/22/2011 8:53:35 PM
muzzammil,

I'm very happy that the story brought you such enjoyment.

If it does indeed make it to the big screen and become the official fourth Matrix movie, I would also have to put in the category of the top-five, all-time greatest movie sagas.

With the way that virtual digitization is going, in the next few years, the movie could be replicated in almost perfect digital realism. This could help dramatically to maintain the original ages of the actors so the movie does feel like just the original actors coming together when they are too old to be convincing. The voices would be from the original actors, but the visuals would all be virtual. I think Warner Brothers would back something like that. It could fly.

Anyway, thanks for the awesome feedback.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Merillion DATE: 12/23/2011 2:47:06 PM
Ok, I've now read your script twice, and I felt like expressing some thoughts. To elaborate quickly, I'm firmly of the opinion that whilst the matrix sequels weren't

perfect, they were certainly adequate, enough so that there isn't any need for another sequel. The story was wrapped up in *Revolutions*, in my humble opinion, rather neatly. If there has to be another sequel, I'm of the opinion that in no way should it feature Neo, Trinity, Smith, or any attempts to bring them back to life, or drastically change what's already been established throughout the course of the 3 previous films, which is, I know, in effect exactly what your script is attempting to do. I can't fault your intent, but I can admit that the direction in which your script goes didn't appeal to me straight off the bat. That said though, as a aspiring writer myself, I approached it with more than an open mind, and am going to be completely upfront and honest in my appraisal. I read through your script the first time just to absorb it all in, and the second time more so with a fine-toothed comb, so to speak. I hope you don't mind long-winded responses.

Where to begin.. all in all, I think you have a great talent for writing, and it obviously shows. Your style is descriptive without being arduously long, and the various settings and images presented are easy to imagine. My faults lie more so with the story itself. Perhaps I'm over analysing, but a lot of it was simply too confusing. You've obviously spent a great deal more time with this story than I have, so perhaps I missed some explanations here and there, but specifically:

- The Super Matrix itself; what is it's real purpose? So the humans win the war, right? So why do they need to control the machines? Are the machines hooked up to this super matrix, and if so, how? Is it in the same or similar manner as the people in the fields that we see in the first matrix film, only with machines in pods? And why do the machines need to be controlled, and for what purpose? Are they providing the remaining human race with some vital resource? If the prevailing humans are in ultimate control of the machines in the super matrix, and if those machines ever do start to present any sort of problem, can't the humans just, ya know, turn them OFF?? What is the point of the giving these machines the illusion of being in control of the original Matrix?

- Too many flashbacks; one or two is fine, but here we're being presented with almost a dozen (or more) most of which only serve to dole out some exposition. There are too many to keep track of, dealing with too many new and random characters. I mean, the Architect has flashbacks, Neo has flashbacks, Trinity has flashbacks that link story-wise to the Architect's flashbacks, then there are flashbacks to the robots and their back-story, flashbacks to the war and how it was won, flashbacks to the Merovingian and his wife and their time in the Matrix, flashbacks to Smith meeting with the Merovingian.

- Why is the Oracle the only one who can exit the super matrix? And how does Trinity dying in *Revolutions* get her back into the real world?

- The cortex itself; you establish that Neo is the first virtual to awaken and exist in the actual real world, so what is he made of? Was he churned out from some human skin-organ-bone printer?? Furthermore, you establish the rarity of his transition into the real world as a never before seen phenomena, and then present within the story a second Cortex-related phenomena, what with the advent of the super-beings and the potential for of the machines to find out that they are actually inside a Matrix. On top of everything, this Cortex manages to produce two amazing phenomena in the realm of

the storyâ€¦ pretty incredible, but then, you reveal it became Trinity's plan to have Neo come into the actual real world, so that really can't be that much of a phenomena after-all..? If Neo was the super-being that Trinity's parents entered the Super Matrix to kill, then how does that take account the previous versions of the One that existed before Neo, or are they being disregarded? Again, confusing.

- The androids; thoroughly undeveloped in my opinion. This entire subplot can be eliminated completely and the story will still be more or less the same. They served 2 ultimate purposes from what I read - 1) To give the architect an emotional motivation, by killing his wife, to build the Cortex, and 2) To convey the idea that humans can be just as aggressive/oppressive as the machines, which in itself was thoroughly detailed in the Animatrix, although granted, I don't expect all but hardcore Matrix fans to have watched it. But then, since a 36 kills his wife, and they admit that the 36's exist beyond the control of the Cortex, how and why does the personal involvement of a 36 motivate him at all, since the very thing that killed his wife won't actually be affected/controlled by the Cortex that he'll eventually build or the super matrix? I guess he just has a general dislike for machines? Again, kinda confusing. It would have been far more interesting in my opinion for them to have captured that one android they implant the bomb in, and then to have the Architect say, "No, I don't want them to all be killed," as an act of forgiveness, or something like that. Kinda cheesy, I'll admit, but more dramatically interesting than introducing them, and then just blowing them all up and never mentioning them again.

I don't write all this to be needlessly hurtful, I'm merely analyzing it from a fan's and wannabe writers perspective. As an aspiring writer myself, I approached it with an open mind and sought to present you with some of the conundrums that your story left me with. I fully encourage you to continue writing however, and I'd like to read more scripts like this online.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Merillion DATE: 12/23/2011 2:48:38 PM –

The Super Matrix itself; what is it's real purpose? So the humans win the war, right? So why do they need to control the machines? Are the machines hooked up to this super matrix, and if so, how? Is it in the same or similar manner as the people in the fields that we see in the first matrix film, only with machines in pods? And why do the machines need to be controlled, and for what purpose? Are they providing the remaining human race with some vital resource? If the prevailing humans are in ultimate control of the machines in the super matrix, and if those machines ever do start to present any sort of problem, can't the humans just, ya know, turn them OFF?? What is the point of the giving these machines the illusion of being in control of the original Matrix?

- Too many flashbacks; one or two is fine, but here we're being presented with almost a dozen (or more) most of which only serve to dole out some exposition. There are too many to keep track of, dealing with too many new and random characters. I mean, the Architect has flashbacks, Neo has flashbacks, Trinity has flashbacks that link story-wise to the Architects flashbacks, then there are flashbacks to the robots and their back-story, flashbacks to the war and how it was won, flashbacks to the Merovingian and his wife and their time in the Matrix, flashbacks to Smith meeting with the Merovingian..

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Merillion DATE: 12/23/2011 2:50:19 PM –

Why is the Oracle the only one who can exit the super matrix? And how does Trinity dying in Revolutions get her back into the real world?

- The cortex itself; you establish that Neo is the first virtual to awaken and exist in the actual real world, so what is he made of? Was he churned out from some human skinorganbone printer?? Furthermore, you establish the rarity of his transition into the real world as a never before seen phenomena, and then present within the story a second Cortex-related phenomena, what with the advent of the super-beings and the potential for of the machines to find out that they are actually inside a Matrix. On top of everything, this Cortex manages to produce two amazing phenomena in the realm of the storyâ€¦ pretty incredible, but then, you reveal it became Trinity's plan to have Neo come into the actual real world, so that really can't be that much of a phenomena after-all..? If Neo was the super-being that Trinity's parents entered the Super Matrix to kill, then how does that take account the previous versions of the One that existed before Neo, or are they being disregarded? Again, confusing.

- The androids; thoroughly undeveloped in my opinion. This entire subplot can be eliminated completely and the story will still be more or less the same. They served 2 ultimate purposes from what I read - 1) To give the architect an emotional motivation, by killing his wife, to build the Cortex, and 2) To convey the idea that humans can be just as aggressive/oppressive as the machines, which in itself was thoroughly detailed in the Animatrix, although granted, I don't expect all but hardcore Matrix fans to have watched it. But then, since a 36 kills his wife, and they admit that the 36's exist beyond the control of the Cortex, how and why does the personal involvement of a 36 motivate him at all, since the very thing that killed his wife won't actually be affected/controlled by the Cortex that he'll eventually build or the super matrix? I guess he just has a general dislike for machines? Again, kinda confusing. It would have been far more interesting in my opinion for them to have captured that one android they implant the bomb in, and then to have the Architect say, "No, I don't want them to all be killed," as an act of forgiveness, or something like that. Kinda cheesy, I'll admit, but more dramatically interesting then introducing them, and then just blowing them all up and never mentioning them again.

I don't write all this to be needlessly hurtful, I'm merely analysing it from a fan's and wannabe writers perspective. As an aspiring writer myself, I approached it with an open mind and sought to present you with some of the conundrums that your story left me with. I fully encourage you to continue writing however, and I'd like to read more scripts like this online.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Merillion DATE: 12/25/2011 5:25:56 AM

Ok, I've now read your script a third and fourth time, and rather than clear up many of the questions I posed earlier, I've sadly only become more confused. For my own sake, I tried to list the various story elements, blow by blow, from beginning to end.. okay (correct me if I'm wrong):

- Neo, after a series of strange visions (in one of which we're introduced to some chick who had a relationship with Neo at some point back before he was the One) awakens to discover that The Matrix, and the previously assumed "real" world of Zion, are actually inside another bigger, Super Matrix, in the ACTUAL real world, and he's introduced to the --

- Architect, the same (but not the same) guy who he met in the TV room at the end of Reloaded, but now he's a genial old guy who turns out wants to help and explain things to Neo, namely --

- That Trinity, his granddaughter, is still alive and also in this real world, and she explains, or laments, to him her lost relationship with her parents --

- The Merovingian and Persephone, who were also real people and brilliant scientists, and how they entered the Matrix to kill Neo before his awareness of being the One could possibly destabilise the whole Super Matrix, but inadvertently became integrated into the program as virtual beings with super powers but with no memory of who they previously were (but mysteriously, still remember that they know each other, are married to each other, and love each other) whereupon Neo learns about --

- The Cortex, a super-organic-computer-brain thing, which houses the Super Matrix, and its unpredictable nature as it threatens to grow, learn and supersede its programming or purpose, which is --

- To control the machines, because in this real world, the humans are the victors of the war and are using the Super Matrix to control all machine kind, except for --

- The 36's, a particular "breed" of robot that survived the war and are striving to undermine the humans to free their oppressed machine brothers. But they're not the only ones who can potentially f#\$k things up for everyone, because --

- Smith is still alive, survived through a sinister dude called Marouk (in the same way as Smith possessed Bane) through which he manages to re-enter the Matrix (the first one) for the purpose of wreaking some havoc to try and bring down the machines from within, who he believes are in control, and he encounters --

- The Oracle, who is only in a few scenes but does what she always does: be needlessly mysterious, and she also talks to --

- Morpheus and Niobe, where she literally repeats the same moral conflict/scenario to Morpheus as the Architect did to Neo at the end of Reloaded, because --

- There could be another attack on Zion from the machines despite the apparent peace that Neo's successfully wrought with his defeat of Smith, and Morpheus (and several others, who are also real people who are plugged into the Super Matrix for life and with no awareness of themselves being in a fake world

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Merillion DATE: 12/25/2011 5:27:26 AM

to stop this and protect Zion, all to, secretly --

- Again, maintain the illusion that the machines are in control of the human race so they remain subservient in the actual real world, an illusion that could be undone --

- Because the cortex, as I mentioned earlier, as it tries to learn or adapt itself, could..like..link itself somehow to Neo, or another virtual, and become more selfaware and, coupled with the new threat of the now re-emerged Smith, could, again, topple the world of the Matrix's --

- But there's hope, because that random chick from before, yeah, Neo knocked her up (coz apparently being the One, like having my dad's brown eyes, can and is passed down genetically) and has a son with One-like powers over the world of the Matrix, who we can only presume, will rise up and the cycle will continue anew.

..Phew. Do I have the overall gist of it? I'm pretty sure that encompasses everything.

The irony of it is, the more read and the more I understand of your script, the more confused I get and the less things make sense. It really feels like there's isn't any one, central narrative to the story. All the flashbacks and all the relationships only serve to dilute the drama. Which leads me too some more specific story elements --

- So if Neo being the One and possessing extraordinary powers could threaten to topple the world of the Super Matrix, by making the Cortex self-aware, then why isn't everyone freaking out over Neo's son, who has the same powers? It seemed that much of the aim of the scientists was to prevent the Cortex from becoming a selfaware A.I robot/being, presumably, to prevent another potential war with machines occurring, to the point that the Merovingian and his wife even enter the Super Matrix with the intent of killing Neo to preserve and protect everything..so yeah, surely Neo's son will present a similar sort of problem? Is something similar bound to happen, that people will have to enter the Super Matrix to try and kill Neo's son, or will they try and do what they did with Neo and bring him into the actual real world too? But if they do that, how will he defeat Smith?

- What are how are the robots being controlled by the super matrix, connected to it? If the machines aren't a sort of power source for the human race, then what actual purpose do they serve? This isn't addressed in your story.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Merillion DATE: 12/25/2011 5:29:32 AM --

The drama itself; it's a lot to ask the audience to take in. You're pretty much saying, "Hey, you know all the emotional high's and low's that you suffered through with the previous 3 movies, the last 2 in particular.. turns out that was all happening in a fake world!" You're pretty much pushing a giant "reset" button. People might as well just watch the first Matrix film and then skip the next two, and just jump straight to yours. What's more, it's already a lot to present to the audience that Neo is alive, but then to really have so little of the story really concern him, just feels wrong. He just becomes a minor player in all this, constantly being served with information as a vassal for the

audience, much like he did in the first film, but in this one it ultimately goes nowhere. In essence, Neo is the character that people will watch another Matrix sequel to see, not some other random person. He takes a back seat to everything here, literally sitting/standing around while other characters explain things to him. He has no actual involvement in the story, reduced to being no more than, again, a tool through which the audience can gain information, and boy, as I alluded to earlier, there's a lot of info being presented. In the first film, key moments of exposition were delivered in perhaps 3-4 key scenes, across much of the first and second acts. Here, it's all over the place. It's just a barrage of new information. I read that in a previous comment you're of the opinion that you cleared up a lot of the holes/inconsistencies presented in the Matrix 2&3, but personally, I found your story to be MUCH more convoluted and only serves to raise a slew of new questions.

In establishing your new rules for the world you've created in your story, you're obviously going to need to provide a lot of exposition in order for people to accept it, but for me, it got to the point where it just took me out of the story. By around 60-70 pages into it, I was feeling a huge disconnect from everything that was happening. I became disengaged because I was trying too hard to keep up with all the characters and the myriad of relationships presented. Even around 85-90 page into it, right toward the very end of the film, various questions and explanations were still being presented as entire new plot developments, right around the time when that third and final act should really be kicking in, when the exposition simply HAS to end so the story could begin to resolve itself. Aside from briefly at the beginning, Smith doesn't make an appearance until the last quarter of the script. This simply doesn't work. He can't be presented as a villain right as the story is about to conclude itself. There's just too much going on, too many characters, too many relationships, too many subplots, too much exposition and techno-babble. The story lacks any real and resounding climax.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Merillion DATE: 12/25/2011 5:31:22 AM –

Look at the path of Morpheus and Niobe in your story. They're trying to protect Zion from another possible attack, but as I said, what motivation does the audience have to care about the people in Zion when we've just been told that all those people don't actually exist, coz they're just virtuals?? What's the risk here? Even if all the virtuals in Zion die, who cares? The explanation that you mention in a previous comment to another poster, about every world being real in its own significant way, just seems wishy-washy to me, and frankly, contradicts the entire notion of people fighting to be free and to exist unencumbered as individuals in the real world. You can't suddenly expect people to want to care about the virtual reality being presented when the whole Matrix trilogy is devoted to people undermining it. And if all the people in the farms die too (in the Zion-matrix world) then the machines won't actually cease to function, right, coz they aren't really being powered by human bodybatteries, coz it's all fake, coz its all in the super matrix..? Right? Like I said, too convoluted.

- The Merovingian and his wife; how and why do they become "super beings"? If the Merovingian has all these crazy powers, why doesn't he just fight and kill Neo in Reloaded during the chateau fight scene, rather than just watch as Neo kills all his henchmen? Or are his powers somehow different or lesser to Neo's? *Edit* Ok, I just

read "when all his henchmen had been disabled and he was left alone with Neo, he was forced to use his power to escape Neo and simultaneously transport him thousands of miles away (when he had Neo follow him through that door). That was a power that not even Neo could replicate. So, that is my line of reasoning." But it's the back-door key that allowed them to pass through doorways miles apart. That had nothing to do with any "super-powers." Seraph and the keymaker both also do this. But anyway, how do they correct the malfunction that inadvertently made the Merovingian and Persephone virtuals, so when Trinity enters the Super Matrix the same doesn't happen to her?

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Merillion DATE: 12/25/2011 5:33:55 AM –

And the fact that they're all related.. are we, as the audience, now supposed to accept that Trinity just stood there and watched as Neo made out with the virtual, superversion of HER OWN MOM during the bathroom kiss scene?? Really..?? And on top of that, not only are Morpheus and Lock brothers.. but the Oracle is their mom..!! That's streeeeetching it. The element you present of some of the virtuals having real world counterparts also just seems too convenient. I get the sense that this is only the case because people wouldn't.. and I mean WOULDN'T, accept that a character like Morpheus, who we've come to love and care about across 3 movies, is another virtual. So conveniently, HE'S real, but everyone else is fake. I dunno, it's just doesn't work me for.

I commend your ability, but this screenplay is hardly the awesome, ground-breaking, story-equal to the first Matrix film that other commenters here have said. If this script was to be made as it stands, right now, just like I just have, people would tear it apart and point out every inconsistency, just like they did the Matrix 2 and 3. I probably sound like an overzealous geek, but, if nothing else, reading your script and analysing it was certainly an interesting and thought provoking exercise that I enjoyed quite a bit. It's even got me thinking about where another Matrix sequel could potentially go. As far as my comments go, I think I've said enough (probably too much.)

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/25/2011 6:43:55 PM
Merillion,

I take no umbrage at all to your comments. On the contrary I am energized and flattered, both that you would read the script so many times with such interest and that you would respond in such depth, with such honesty and with such excellent questions.

As the holidays are particularly intense right now and because your comments will require some forethought and ample reply time, I will have to respond a bit later on. I do look forward to it and will do my best to address all your concerns and insights.

Until then, enjoy the winter season.

Thanks, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/26/2011 6:21:30 PM

Merillion,

I started to respond to your initial comments (see Section A below), but then even more comments came in from you and I sensed that addressing every thread of your discussion would not necessarily be the most productive approach considering that there are so many threads. So I have given you a broad, overview response (see Section B below).

Section A:

Merillion,

Yes, the resurrection of the old characters has the potential to become tedious (in my story as well as any one else's), but I had hope to avoid that by giving the old characters very dynamic twists of personality in a topsy-turvy world. Most people either like it or hate it. Very few in between.

Thank you for recognizing my writing talent. I have been working on it for quite a while. And I continue to write regularly.

Yes, the story was twisty, convoluted and with many unexpected turns. To many people, this is exactly what a forth Matrix should provide; to others, it is just too much information in a disorienting format. Mostly a matter of taste, I would venture to say. I, too, would probably have some trouble with the storyline if I didn't have the perspective of having written it and the patience of a die-hard fan. I do, however, believe that in a visual format, with visual clues and cues, the time shifts and flashbacks could be less difficult to follow. Hard to know, though, unless it's made into a movie.

It's true that much of the story was laced with exposition. In retrospect, I could probably have done a better job of embellishing it or diminishing it to the point where it wasn't so obvious; there was, however, a need to have most of it in there to create the story I envisioned. Perhaps I should have zeroed in on a smaller chunk of my script and spent more time fleshing out new characters (such as the 36s, which I think could have a really cool and less undeveloped presence) and not jumping around quite so much. When the boys in Hollywood finally come knocking (??), I'll be sure to edit/condense/refine the official script with your thoughts in mind.

To answer some of your questions about the reasoning/logic, the following is intended to give some insight and it is all according to my script's vision of the real world which exists in the year 2249:

- 1) Having achieved independent thinking and motivation, smart machines attacked and came close to decimating humanity.

- 2) To coexist, humans had to develop a system (the Supermatrix) that would subjugate smart machines and prevent them from ever being able to threaten humanity while at the same time controlling them for human needs.

3) The Supermatrix is necessary because humans are not willing to exist without the use of smart (A.I.) machines. Too much of the future world has built itself around them, become dependent on them and is unwilling to live without them. (Even in our world, many people would find it intolerable to live without machines; even more so, I think, in the future).

4) Yes, the machines are hooked up to the Supermatrix. I envision a wireless internetworked system that, if broken or altered by the machines (or humans), renders those machines inoperable and/or tagged until they are reintegrated into the network, thus preventing them from working/operating outside the Supermatrix's system of control.

5) "What is the point of the giving these machines the illusion of being in control of the original Matrix?" This question of yours is one that I don't really discuss or elaborate on in the script. I do, however, have a reasoning. I didn't get into it in the story, though, because it's another giant bit of exposition, demanding precious page real estate. Besides, I wasn't sure how people would take to it. It's kind of chewy and perhaps difficult to swallow (although I personally think it's pretty ingenious). Okay, here it goes: Smart machines, it turns out, need sleep just like humans. They also need to dream, just like humans. The Architect takes advantage of this extraordinary condition to deceive and harness the machines. Here's the big picture: All smart machines dream. Within the inter-networked system (the Supermatrix), the Architect alters their perception of their reality so their dream states are perceived by them as waking states while their waking states seem like dreams. In this deception their real world is perceived as the Matrix and their dream state is perceived as their mundane tasks that they conduct in the human world. I know this concept of mine is out there and radical, but it could work. Look at it this way: Lets say that our current human reality (yours and mine) is that we exist in a world where robots and machines are under our control (as they are, more or less) and we go about our normal lives within this framework. And then let's say that our sleeping/dreaming world is where we believe we are controlled and persecuted by robots and machines and we must free humanity to alert them to this disturbing fact. If we told people that we thought machines controlled us and used us as power cells for their existence, who is going to believe us or think we are sane? Probably not many. Okay now, flip it around. The smart machines, in what they've been deceived to believe is their real world in which they control humans in the Matrix, and what they've been deceived to believe is their sleeping world, where they perform mundane tasks for humans. Suppose one of the machines tried to pursued other machines that their dreams of the mundane world were reality and their real lives in the Matrix world were just a deception. What machine is going to think that is a true or sane conclusion? Probably not many. Okay, I know, pretty out thereâ€¦.but think about it for a while. Anyway, that's my take on it. Ultimately, the smart machines in the real world have to be deceived into doing their mundane tasks without knowing that they are actually doing them in the real world, otherwise they will be resentful, opposition and ultimately aggressive towards humans.

Section B:

Merillion,

You say that the story becomes more confusing as you read it multiple times, but your synopsis of the story is spot on. I can say that you probably did a better job of breaking it down and explaining it than I could. My respects to you for being so attentive and patient.

My guess is that even though you broke it down precisely and can understand it well, you found that the story, as it stands, is not to your liking. I respect your opinion and understand your position. You also say that the story seems to garner a lot of praise on my site, and you suggest that it may not be warranted or justified. My response is that it depends on what you are looking for from the story and on your criteria for success in that story. As it stands, I agree with you that the story is not ready for prime-time; it is disparate, unresolved and over-reaching. Nonetheless, I think there is much to like in the story, if those parts are to your taste.

The ones that seem to like the script the most do not mind that the story does not follow a linear progression and predicable Hollywood format. They don't seem to mind that the story moves in many (often disparate directions) and with little finality or resolution at the end. The ones that like it find great pleasure in a story that tries to explore many new and unexpected possibilities even if it involves tolerating a lot of exposition. The ones that like it seem to see it more as the groundwork for many ideas to continue on, either in future movies, episodes or just in their imaginations.

Some key points to answer your questions:

I agree that in my script Neo being a passive figure deflates his presence a great deal (although he does have some action scenes). But I felt that his character was played out to a certain extent in the Trilogy, and I wanted to let new characters as well as some older ones, whose presence in previous movies had only been touched upon, have more room to breath. I do leave open the potential, however, for Neo to be active in any future scripts both as a player in the real (Cortex) world and as a player in the Matrix (where his son exists).

The Cortex is different from a computer which can be programmed and reprogrammed at will. The Cortex is more like an organism that, once it's genetic code and programming are initiated, can only be altered or controlled indirectly. Think of the Oracle as medicine that is injected into the Cortex with the intent of trying to alter or correct specific parts. And, like medicine, there is some trial and error and the results are not always perfect or predictable.

The Oracle is not the only one who can enter and exit the Supermatrix, but every attempt is made to limit her to the one that enters and exits regularly. By restricting variables (i.e. people entering and exiting in the Supermatrix), potential problems are reduced.

If some one dies in the Matrix or Supermatrix, they die in the real world (although

Persephone and Victor are unexpected exceptions to this rule). Just before Trinity dies in *Revolutions*, she is extracted from the Supermatrix (On page 3 of the script the Architect says - "Nataani, I apologize for not telling you earlier, but, your timing was impeccable. The extraction was a complete success.") The trick here was to extract Trinity just after she finishes her (overly long?) dying speech to Neo but also before she actually dies (otherwise she can never be extracted, because she is dead).

The android 36s were pretty undeveloped. I agree. I would love to flesh out that aspect of the story. I think it has lots of potential.

My script introduces lots of ideas, characters and story lines. In the process I think it explains a lot of loose stuff from the original movies while at the same time generating a lot of new loose stuff, leaving open the potential for more in the future. Some like that, some don't. Hit or miss.

I could go on point for point (and I feel that all your points have great debate potential) but I wish not so much to refute what you have said so much as to accept your position without offense. You have great analytical skill and you have found just about every flaw or unanswered aspect of the story (which, in keeping with the original Matrix ideas and concepts, I think, has a similar degree of vagary and therefore makes for a compatible story).

Everything you have said has made me rethink my original intentions and/or devise better ways to rewrite the story if I ever get around to it. The main things I would do are probably:

- Break the story down into two stories so I can flesh out characters and situations that are thin.
- Reduce exposition wherever possible
- Find ways to have Neo be a more integral/animated player (even if he's not the central figure)
- Expand the story of the 36s
- Maybe eliminate Smith
- Maybe use the 36s as the main threatening agents (perhaps having them infiltrate the Source, Cortex & Supermatrix systems some how)

Anyway, Merillion, I would encourage you to create your own version of a Fourth Matrix. I would imagine that any story continuation you might come up with would be something worthy, as you have incredible knowledge of the Trilogy and are very good at logical conceptualization and are very attuned to the critical analysis of potential pitfalls. If you do ever come up with a fourth story (or even an outline for one), if you feel inclined, send it my way; I would be excited and flattered to take a look at it.

Thank you for all your thoughts. It has helped me understand my story better and will give other reads (of comments) much to chew on and think about.

All the best, PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Hdogga DATE: 12/30/2011 11:59:04 AM

I am excited for the next matrix, I read the script and I am so looking forward to this :) :) :) :P :P :P :P :P :P :P :P :P :P

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/31/2011 3:56:51 AM

Hodogga,

This is not an official script, but glad you liked it.

Keep your fingers crossed for a Matrix 4, no matter who writes the official version.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Joey b DATE: 12/31/2011 11:25:40 PM

This script sucks so bad. It makes no sense.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 12/31/2011 11:38:24 PM

Joey b,

I admit it has its problems. If you could be more specific, it would be more helpful to me as a writer and more interesting as a comment to read. How exactly does it "suck" and it what ways does it "make no sense at all"?

Hope the Matrix 4 that actually gets made is less sucky and makes more sense to you.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: richard laughter DATE: 1/2/2012 12:21:05 AM

ill admit you have plenty of talent man, and the plot connects well with the prior film, but to me it came off as more of a fanfic than an actual possibility for a sequel. i think i got this feeling from you making the ARCHITECT trinity's grandfather. it just didn't feel right too me. as for the whole super matrix concept, i liked it, and think that it would work, but highly doubt that it would be well received. sooo many inception jokes, its not funny also i feel that the flashbacks come to often and to awkwardly. i would try to go back and condense it as much as possible. look at it this way. if this was actually gonna become a movie, alot of it would have to be either cut or condensed anyway.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: Sunny P DATE: 1/2/2012 12:25:32 PM

First of all PD Wood, nice work. I liked the script enough to read it all in one setting. However, here are my comments/concerns:

You say the super matrix and matrix are like a two way mirror and that the characters do not know what they are doing in each reality. Although your script says otherwise. The Oracle knows exactly what she is doing when she crosses through the super matrix and enters the matrix. She warns the Merov. and Perso. about Smith. She also purposefully tells Morph. to unplug Trinity so she can get to Neo.

In your script Trinity also mentions that she wanted to kill NEO but then she fell in love with him and then construed a plan to bring NEO to reality. This happened before she entered the matrix and she knowingly carried out the same plan after she crossed over.

Your script also shows the Oracle telling Merov. and Perso. that they are programs and they are surprised and get mad. From the trilogy they already know they are programs, that's how the Merov. got all of his power and money, from being programs. In Reloaded the Merov. even rights a program himself, in the slice of cake, which is given to the girl he gets a BJ from, which gets Perso. mad.

I understood your ending for matrix 4 and I didn't need any clarification, however I prefer the ending for matrix 3 than your matrix 4 ending.

On the positive side I was still entertained the entire time I read your script, only had some minor issues.

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/2/2012 3:54:26 PM
richard laughter,

I'm glad you liked the script, the Supermatrix concept and that you felt it all connected well with the Trilogy. That in itself is praise enough.

I agree with all your other comments: more fanfic than bonefide script, probably too many inception parallels, flashbacks are tricky.

I think the whole "intertwined familial relationships" concept is a hit or miss for most people. Missed with you.

If there is any interest at all from the Hollywood folks, I have no doubt that much would get cut, altered and/or condensed in a rewrite. That is a challenge I would welcome immediately.

I think my script sets the stage for many extension ideas but only a few would probably get developed in a single new movie concept. Let's hope there's enough interest.

Thanks for the constructive criticism and praise. Always welcomed.

PD Wood

COMMENT: AUTHOR: P D Wood DATE: 1/2/2012 4:47:19 PM
Sunny P,

Reading it in one sitting is definitely the way to get the most out of the script. Packs more of a wallop and keeps the thread of the story more clear. I may not have explained it deeply enough in the script, but the idea is that people in the real world who are

slated to go into the Matrix/Supermatrix have certain specific memories turned off temporarily while other specific (purposely designed or implanted) memories remain intact. (NEO: So, their memories are erased? ARCHITECT/ALEX: No, not erased. Specific memories are shut down.)

So, for instance, the Oracle knows that her mission is to tell Morpheus to free Trinity to then help unplug Neo (because it is a memory that has not been shut down), but the knowledge that she learned that information in the real world is shutdown. So in the Matrix/Supermatrix world she assumes that any knowledge or visions that she has about the future are simply part of her abilities as an Oracle.

This selectivity of information/knowledge would be true of Trinity also. She may be aware of the real world and the plan to extract Neo while she remains in the real world, but she has no knowledge of this when she enters the Matrix/Supermatrix world because all those memories have been shut down. Her destiny in the Matrix/Supermatrix is determined solely by Morpheus and the Oracle. (And as far as her love for Neo goes, it is a logical outcome of her basic personality which remains consistent in all worlds, i.e. Trinity would naturally come to love Neo simply by learning about him and being around him.)

The part of the script that shows the Oracle telling Persephone and the Merovingian that they are programs is supposed to have happened many years before the events in the first Matrix movie, therefore they would not have known they were programs in the first movie.

Hard to follow all this and maybe needs more clarification. Trying to reduce an already overly abundant amount of exposition.

But I'm glad you found positive aspects throughout some of the inconsistencies and I hope my explanation makes the story more clear/palatable. Let me know if you have any more thoughts.

Thanks for reading, Sunny P, and have a good new year.